



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>









2

THE  
HISTORIANS OF SCOTLAND.

VOL. II.

Historians  
27

*Edinburgh : Printed by Thomas and Archibald Constable,*

FOR

**EDMONSTON AND DOUGLAS.**

LONDON . . . . . HAMILTON, ADAMS, AND CO.

CAMBRIDGE . . . . . MACMILLAN AND CO.

GLASGOW . . . . . JAMES MACLEHOSE.

THE  
HISTORIANS OF SCOTLAND

VOL. II.

Andrew of Wyntoun's  
Orygynale Cronykil  
of Scotland.

VOL. I.

EDINBURGH  
EDMONSTON AND DOUGLAS  
1872.





The Orgygnale  
Cronykil  
Of Scotland.

BY ANDROW OF WYNTOUN.

EDITED BY

DAVID LAING.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

EDINBURGH

EDMONSTON AND DOUGLAS

1872.



## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTORY NOTICE, . . . . .	ix
MACPHERSON'S PREFACE TO THE EDITION OF THE CRONYKIL, 1795, . . . . .	xvii
FACSIMILE OF MSS., . . . . .	<i>to face</i> xl
THE ORYGYNAL CRONYKIL OF SCOTLAND:—	
THE FYRST BUKE, . . . . .	1
THE SECUND BUKE, . . . . .	67
THE THYRDE BUKE, . . . . .	129
THE FERD BUKE, . . . . .	171
THE FYFT BUKE, . . . . .	269



## INTRODUCTORY NOTICE.

IN the proposed series of the Early Historians of Scotland, the Metrical Chronicle by the Prior of St. Serf's Inch in Lochleven could not be overlooked. It belongs to the reign of King James the First, having been completed about the year 1426 ; but how long the author had been employed in compiling it can only be conjectured. We do not find the Prior's Chronicle mentioned by Walter Bowar, Abbot of Inchcolm, the continuator of Fordun in his *Scotichronicon*, yet it must, for at least a century, have been esteemed a work of historical importance, as may be inferred from the numerous transcripts of which we find traces, or which are still extant.

In modern times Wyntoun's Chronicle was first introduced to notice by Dr. William Nicolson, Bishop of Carlisle, in his *Scottish Historical Library*, 1702. It was also described by Dr. George Mackenzie in Volume First of his *Lives and Characters*, 1708. But Father Thomas Innes, in his *Critical Essay* in 1729, having carefully examined a number of mss., was the first to point out some of the chief variations, and

to express the opinion that the Royal ms. was "the most entire and most valuable of them all;" he further adds, "that it appears to be the last review and edition (if I may speak so) that Winton made of his Chronicle, containing several corrections, additions, and alterations made in it upon better information." A zealous antiquary of that time, Captain Robert Seton, in the meanwhile, had set himself most diligently to prepare the entire work for the press.

Public attention had already been awakened to our older historians and poets by such publications as the *Chronica de Mailros*, by Bishop Fell, in his collection *Rerum Anglicarum Scriptorum Veterum*, tom. i., 1684; of *Johannis de Fordun Scotorum Historia*, by Dr. Thomas Gale, 1691; and again in a separate and more perfect form by Thomas Hearne, 1722; Douglas's *Virgil's Æneis* by Thomas Ruddiman, 1710; and, I may add, of Knox's *Historie of the Reformatioun*, in a genuine form, by Matthew Crawford, 1732. The preface to Captain Seton's transcript of Wyntoun's Chronicle is dated at Edinburgh, December 21, 1724. Having copied the text of the Edinburgh (Denmylne) ms., he afterwards, by a careful and minute collation of one or two other mss., added on the margins numerous various readings. But want of encouragement or some other cause prevented his scheme from being realized; and on his death, in 1731, his transcript was sold, when his library was dispersed by auction.<sup>1</sup> At a later period

<sup>1</sup> A short notice of Captain Seton will be added in Vol. III. to the description of his Manuscript.

this volume was acquired by Pinkerton the historian,<sup>1</sup> who announced in 1786 his intention of publishing the chief portion of the Chronicle : but some time was still to elapse before the work became accessible in a printed form.

At length, in the year 1795, *THE ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL OF SCOTLAND*, by Wyntoun, appeared in two large and handsome volumes, edited by Mr. DAVID MACPHERSON. It was fortunate that the work was undertaken by a person so thoroughly competent as an Editor. In preparing his edition for the press, Macpherson had chiefly recourse to Manuscripts preserved in the British Museum. The text of the Royal ms., which by general consent was reckoned as the earliest and most perfect copy of the work, he accordingly adopted, and adhered to it, on the whole, most faithfully, using only some small liberties by changing the *ff's* and *ll's* to a single *f* and *l*. It might perhaps have been well had he extended such emendations to other peculiarities of that ms., more especially by rejecting the use of the letters *w* and *ww*, also of *v*, for the usual forms of *u*, *v*, and *w*; as, according to his orthography, such words as *sun* (a son), *sunnyis* (sons), *lywyng* (living), *wertu* (virtue), *wywe* (wife), *waknyd* (wakened), and *vod* (wood), in their ordinary meaning, are not at once apparent. His volumes were welcomed at the time as a valuable accession to Scottish literature,

<sup>1</sup> Captain Seton's ms. now belongs to myself.



and the Editor was justly commended for the diligence and learning he had displayed in such a satisfactory manner.

The copies of these volumes in late years had become scarce and high priced, and although the earlier portions of the Chronicle (beginning with the Creation of the World), omitted by Macpherson, have no claims to historical importance, an edition of the entire work had long been an object of desire. There were also early manuscripts unknown to him which required examination and collation. To what extent the Author actually revised and enlarged his Chronicle will afterwards have to be considered. At present it may be noticed that the chief alterations, made by the Author, are contained in Book iv., Chap. viii. p. 212—

In this Chapter yhe sall here,  
Qwhen the Scottis beset be Psychtis were ;

and Chap. xix. p. 237—

Now quhen the Psychtis in Scotlande  
Come, and in it wes regnande.

Instead, however, of pointing out these alterations, as Macpherson has done, among the Various Readings in his last volume, I have given both texts on the same page, as the most distinct mode of exhibiting some important variations in regard to the history and succession of the Pictish rule in Scotland.

In undertaking this task, as I had long been satisfied by occasional examination and comparison with other

early mss., that the Royal ms. still retained its pre-eminence, it appeared to be the easiest and safest mode to follow Macpherson's text. Neither could I discover any good reason for attempting to supersede his Introduction, Notes, and Glossary, by altering the form for the sake of apparent novelty. I therefore prefer to let these volumes appear as a republication of Macpherson's edition, revised and enlarged, wherever it seemed to be required. To have done otherwise would have, I think, been an act of injustice to his memory.

Although thus professing to be a New Edition, it is by no means to be regarded as a mere verbal reprint. All the suppressed or omitted portions, forming nearly one-third of the entire work, are now published for the first time, from the Royal ms.; and the text throughout has been carefully revised, without adhering too slavishly, like Macpherson, to the peculiarities of the original transcriber in retaining unnecessary contractions, for instance "De" "pe," or "pat" for *The*, *thé* (thee), or *that*. Such a mode of editing can serve no useful purpose, but is rather calculated to render the pages unreadable. I ought perhaps to express regret in not having also changed the letters *w*, *v*, *u*, to the usual form of *v*, *u*, and *w*. Obvious errors have been corrected, but no liberties taken in altering the text; and words supplied from other copies are enclosed with brackets. Had I been forming a new text, I might have preferred the orthography of some other mss.; but there prevails at present a kind of pedantic conceit in a

literal adherence to the peculiar orthography or ignorance of unknown transcribers.

In order that no unnecessary delay should occur in completing the successive volumes for Subscribers to this series of the Early Scottish Historians, some matters have for the present been reserved. The Third and concluding Volume of Wyntoun's Chronicle will therefore contain, along with the Ninth and last Book of the Chronicle, such additional notices of the Author as may be discovered, along with a detailed description of all the known MSS. of his work. The Various Readings furnished by a diligent collation, and Macpherson's Notes, and Glossary, will likewise be considerably enlarged.

As all this was a task of no ordinary labour, I could not personally have undertaken it within any limited period. It was fortunate therefore that the publishers were able to secure the services of Mr. ANDREW GILLMAN, of London, for the more tedious work of transcription and collation; and I think I cannot pay him a greater compliment than to say that his application and accuracy are not unworthy of David Macpherson himself.

DAVID LAING.

EDINBURGH, November 1872.

---

*An exact facsimile of the Title-page of Macpherson's Edition is given on the page opposite.*

DE  
ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL  
OF  
SCOTLAND,

BE  
*ANDROW OF WYNTOWN,*  
PRIOWR OF SANCT SERFIS YNCHE IN LOCH LEVYN.

---

NOW FIRST PUBLISHED,  
WITH  
NOTES, A GLOSSARY, &c.  
BY  
*DAVID MACPHERSON.*

---

THE FIRST VOLUME.

---

LONDON:  
*PRINTED BY T. BENSLEY;*  
AND SOLD BY THOMAS EGERTON, WHITEHALL;  
AND WILLIAM LAING, EDINBURGH.

M.DCC.XCV.



# PREFACE

BY

DAVID MACPHERSON. 1795.

THE earliest historians of a country are undoubtedly the most valuable, if, upon a fair critical trial of their agreement with the writers of the neighbouring countries, but more especially with the sure testimony of public records and charters still remaining, they appear to have made a faithful use of the works of preceding writers and of other vouchers extant in their times, most of which being now lost, they, as the earliest faithful copiers of them, are entitled to our respect and gratitude for furnishing us with the only means of obtaining the knowledge of many of the transactions of past ages. Hence it evidently follows, that the truest and most essential service that can be done to the history of any nation, is to lay before the public genuine editions of its most antient and authentic historical monuments, and of the works of those who first attempted its general history.

Of the few general historians of Scotland, JOHN OF FORDUN has generally been esteemed the best, as well as the original one. He certainly deserves much praise for his industry;<sup>1</sup> and we must ever regret that he did not live to finish his work.

<sup>1</sup> Some notices, or conjectures, concerning his labours in acquiring materials for his work, are dispersed in the Preface to Hearne's edition of it.

ANDROW OF WYNTOWN, not inferior to Fordun in historic merit, has also an equal claim to the title of an *original historian of Scotland*; for, though he survived Fordun, it is certain that he never saw his work; and his Chronicle has the advantage not only of being completed to the period which he proposed, but even of being revised and greatly improved by himself in a second copy. It has also the further advantage, for such it surely ought to be esteemed, of being written in the language of the country

“Tyl ilkè mannys wndyrstandyng;”

whereas the information contained in all the other histories of Scotland preceding the middle of the seventeenth century, if we except the brief chronicle subjoined to some manuscripts of Wyntown, and the translations of Ballenden and Read, was effectually concealed from the unlearned part of mankind under the veil of a dead or a foreign language.<sup>1</sup>

In Wyntown's Chronicle the historian may find what for want of more antient records, which have long ago perished, we must now consider as the original accounts of many transactions, and also many events related from his own knowledge or the reports of eye-witnesses. His faithful adherence to his

<sup>1</sup> Boyse and Buchanan are the only historians of Scotland, if they may be so called, whose works have been translated; and they are the very two who ought to have been consigned to the deepest obscurity. Hence in a great measure proceed the corrupt ideas of Scottish history, which are so deeply rooted in the minds of many people. The evil is greatly increased by some teachers of Latin putting Buchanan's history into the hands of their pupils, because, forsooth, his Latin style is very fine, which is but a wretched excuse for perverting the youthful mind, though they could prove his latinity superior to Cicero's.

So firmly established was the custom of writing in Latin, that Sir David Lindsay, about a century after Wyntown, thought it necessary to apologise in the beginning of his *Monarchy* for writing in his native language by producing the examples of Moses, Aristotle, Plato, Virgil, Cicero, &c., who all wrote in their own languages.

authorities appears from comparing his accounts with unquestionable vouchers, such as the *Fœdera Angliæ*, and the existing remains of the *Register of the Priory of St. Andrews*, that venerable monument of antient Scottish history and antiquities, generally coeval with the facts recorded in it, whence he has given large extracts, almost literally translated. All these we have hitherto been obliged to take at second or third hand in copies by Bower and others, with such additions and embellishments as they were pleased to make to Wyntown's simple and genuine narrative.<sup>1</sup>

An ecclesiastical historian of Scotland can nowhere find so good an account of the Bishops of St. Andrews, with occasional notices concerning the other sees, as from Wyntown, who in describing the churches, their buildings, and paraphernalia, shows himself quite at home.

The compiler of a Scottish Peerage may obtain from Wyntown more true information concerning the antient noble families of Scotland than is to be found in any work extant, except the accurate and elaborate research made by the late Lord Hailes in the celebrated Sutherland case, wherein he has repeatedly had recourse to our author for proofs of the laws and customs of succession.

In this view the lawyer will also find the Chronicle of Wyntown an useful addition to his library, and may consult it with advantage when called upon to adjust a disputed inheritance in an antient family.

As a specimen of the language of Scotland, a faithful and correct edition of Wyntown must be an acquisition to the philologists of every country whose language is of Gothic origin, seeing that no manuscript of any Scottish work known

<sup>1</sup> Ruddiman, in his elaborate notes on Buchanan's history, has had frequent occasion to show that his author, when departing from Wyntown's authority, generally departed from the truth.



to exist comes into any degree of comparison in point of antiquity and purity with the royal manuscript of Wyntown, nor even with the Cotton one. In Wyntown's work we have near three hundred lines of Barber, the only Scottish writer prior to himself now extant, in a more genuine state than in any manuscript or edition of Barber's own work [*see Index, vo. Barber*]; and, what is infinitely more valuable, he has fortunately preserved to us a little elegiac song on the death of King Alexander III., which must be near ninety years older than Barber's work. This is alone sufficient with every reader of taste to stamp a very high value on Wyntown.

Valuable and curious as Wyntown's work thus appears in so many points of view, how can it be accounted for that he has been allowed to remain in manuscript for so many centuries, eclipsed and superseded by writers of far inferior merit, almost forgotten and even unknown to many, whose business it was to have consulted him?

For above two centuries after the art of printing was introduced in Scotland,<sup>1</sup> the Scottish press produced scarcely any historic works, indeed not one deserving the name of *history*. The fury of religious controversy and the rage of civil wars deprived the generality of the people of inclination as well as opportunity to cultivate letters or the sciences, so that during the long continuance of this intellectual darkness, while England was making great additions to the public stock of historic knowledge, the interests of Scottish literature, history, and science were abandoned to perish, or consigned to the care of strangers.<sup>2</sup> After the accession of King James VI. to the Crown

<sup>1</sup> From a patent of King James IV. it appears that a printing-press was first established at Edinburgh in 1507. [*Life of Thomas Ruddiman by Mr. Chalmers*, p. 80.]

<sup>2</sup> While scarcely any books but those of religious controversy were produced in Scotland, and the few Scottish historic or scientific works were

of England, the language in which Wyntown wrote was almost completely proscribed by Scottish writers, and carefully avoided by every person who wished to be thought above the vulgar. In such circumstances a work, of which the language was even then partly obsolete in Scotland, which cherished no religious prejudices, nor sacrificed truth on the altars of national vanity, was sure to be neglected; and during this time it is very probable that many valuable manuscripts of it have perished.

But in the present age, when the study of history is in general estimation, and when the history of Scotland in particular begins by the abilities and exertions of some of her literary sons to be cleared of the thick mist of fable under which Hector Boyse had buried it, to be studied in a rational manner, and to engage the attention of the learned in general; when even the language of Scotland attracts the attention of philologists in various countries as illustrative of their own, it is truly surprising that one of the earliest and most authentic histories, and the very earliest and purest specimen of the language of that country, has not ere now been drawn forth

published at Paris, Amsterdam, &c., where the uncorrected errors of printers and engravers were superadded to the errors of the authors; while most of the learned natives of Scotland chose to reside abroad, as if their own country were the only one which ought not to be enlightened by their genius and learning, several learned men in England were with the most laudable industry and patriotism employing their time and their talents in publishing those historic treasures which had for ages lain dormant in churches and libraries. Nor was their attention entirely confined to English history: to these friends of the republic of letters Scotland stands indebted for the only editions of the *Chronicles of Melros* and of *Holyroodhouse*, for the first edition of the *Chronicle of Mann*, and for the first and second editions of *Fordun*. These, being all historical works and written in Latin, may be considered as the common concern of the literary world; but even *Douglas's Virgil* and *King James's Christ-Kirk on the green*, though written in the dialect of Scotland and not historical, were published in England long before a Scottish edition of either of them was thought of.

from the obscurity or invisibility which has so long concealed it even from the researches of men of literature.

Seeing the labour of publishing this most valuable antient Scottish historian declined by all others, I thought I could not employ my leisure more usefully to my country, or more agreeably to myself, than by laying before the public a genuine edition of Wyntown. As however unequal I may be to the task in respect of talents and learning, an edition by me, with the care and attention which I intended to bestow upon it, must surely be much better than no edition at all.

With this intention I applied to the Trustees of the British Museum for permission to transcribe the royal manuscript of Wyntown, which was immediately granted with a politeness and attention to the interests of literature worthy of the guardians of the greatest literary treasure in Britain.

Wyntown, like most other historians of his own and the preceding ages, begins his work at the creation ; and he gives a general history of the world in the first five books, with very little of Scottish or British history till the commencement of the sixth ; after which he gradually drops foreign affairs, and comes home to the proper business of his undertaking. Exactly the same was the plan of Fordun, whose numerous pages, as further stuffed with superfluous matter by his continuator, I have often turned over with great labour and disgust in search of some minute particle of early Scottish history, which was lost in the mass of trifling and extraneous matter. On these occasions I could not help wishing that the editor had taken the trouble of selecting the few sentences, which are useful, and suppressing the vast quantity of lumber, which loads the work and distresses the reader.

In order to save the readers of Wyntown the labour of wandering through a wilderness of Asiatic, Greek and Roman history, in search of minute notices concerning Scotland or

Britain, I have carefully selected all that in any respect concerns the British islands, whether true or fabulous, and have suppressed all the foreign matter in the first five books,<sup>1</sup> only preserving the metrical contents of the chapters, whereby the reader will know the nature of what is withheld, and will, I trust, be pleased to find that the book is not swelled by printing what would never be read. This separation of the useful from the useless has had the approbation of some of the best judges of Scottish history.

From the beginning of the sixth book the work is published entire *verbatim et literatim* to the conclusion.

Of the several manuscripts of Wyntown, it is sufficiently known from Innes, who had examined many, [*see his excellent Critical Essay*, pp. 624, 683, 823,] that the one, which belongs to the Royal library now in the Museum, is greatly superior to all others. It not only has the author's improvements, but is also much purer in the language than any other copy that I have been able to get any knowledge of: it is moreover the only one which is not mutilated by accident or curtailed by design; and the few omissions in it are fully supplied from another manuscript belonging to the Cotton library.

From this most valuable manuscript I have made my transcript, which, from careful and repeated collation, I may venture to say, is exact, notwithstanding the inconveniencies inseparable from writing it at a considerable distance from my own house, and at limited hours. But when I say that my transcript is exactly copied from the Royal manuscript, I do not wish to be understood, as if I had rigidly adhered to errors, which are evidently slips of the pen. While transcribing, as well as

<sup>1</sup> In this I have the examples of the great editors Gale and Hearne, the former of whom has suppressed the extraneous part of Higden's *Polychronicon*, and the latter has passed over the fabulous part of the British history in Robert of Brunne's work.

while collating, I had constantly the Cotton and Harleian manuscripts before me, and carefully compared the whole; and, as it is my earnest desire that the edition may be more perfect than any one manuscript taken singly, I have corrected all obvious errors from these two, but chiefly from the Cotton, and, where neither of them were satisfactory, by extracts from the manuscripts in the Advocates' Library at Edinburgh. There are moreover a few instances of obvious defects, which I have been obliged to supply, and such insertions, however minute, are constantly distinguished by being inclosed in crochets. This liberty, however, I have very seldom taken, as I have, during the progress of this work, as well as on other occasions, frequently felt the bad consequences of the very common liberty taken by transcribers and editors in new-modelling the works of their authors. I have accordingly let many a line go to the press with defective or redundant measure, which a very slight alteration might have rectified, had I not determined to abstain from all corrections not absolutely necessary for restoring the sense of my author where evidently vitiated by transcribers, and to let him appear with his own imperfections on his head, rather than to give the reader the smallest reason to doubt, that what he sees before him is the genuine work of Wyntown.<sup>1</sup>

Wyntown has divided his work into nine books of very

<sup>1</sup> I have in several instances corrected the Elegiac Chronicle, which Wyntown has incorporated with his work from a collation of other manuscripts wherein it is found. I thought it the more incumbent on me to do this, as the reading is monstrously corrupted by the transcriber, who, if not entirely ignorant of the Latin language, was at least utterly unacquainted with Latin prosody. Being moreover not the work of my author, I thought myself more at liberty in it; and I trust that I have only restored his reading, and in so doing given a more correct copy of the whole of the original part of this antient elegiac poem than has ever yet been published. In doing this I am supported by the example of that correct editor Ruddiman, who restored the true readings of antient authors, which Buchanan had transcribed in the third book of his history from erroneous editions.

unequal length, the eighth alone containing more pages of the manuscript than the first four; and these books are divided into chapters, which being also very unequal, the long ones are subdivided into sections or portions, which the rubricators and transcribers, because they begin with illuminated letters, have generally converted to chapters. It seemed to me the best rule to call only those chapters, which I found ushered in by metrical titles,<sup>1</sup> which often run in such words as these—

“ This Chapter sall yhow tell,” &c.

Now we cannot pretend to make four or five chapters out of what the author expressly calls only one. I have, however, as nearly as possible, preserved the distinction by beginning every section with an open capital answering to the illuminated letter in the Royal manuscript, and setting a space between it and the preceding one, as was usually done in the antient magnificent manuscripts.

The faults, which may be found in the punctuation, are wholly my own, as the manuscript is entirely destitute of any such distinctions. The irregular grammar (as it appears to us) and frequent inverted order, common in antient composition, have in some instances left me uncertain, if I have divided the sentences according to the author's meaning; but I hope that there are not many instances of gross blunders.

The author's text is followed by the *Various Readings*, to which is prefixed a short notice explaining the method used in quoting them.

The *Notes* are placed together at the end of the work in

<sup>1</sup> I was obliged to make an exception to this rule, and it is the only one, in the very first chapter of the work, which the rubricator had neglected. As to the propriety or impropriety of giving the name of chapters to divisions sometimes longer than what are called books in other works, I leave it to the critics.

order to avoid breaking the uniformity of the page.<sup>1</sup> They are chiefly employed in endeavouring to illustrate such portions of Scottish history as seem to be casually involved in obscurity, or intentionally perverted by fiction: not that I pretend to discover the truth on all occasions: we can often perceive the existence of error without being able absolutely to disprove it; and even when we think our proofs are undeniable, we are sometimes far from the truth. So fully convinced am I of this, that, instead of presuming dictatorially to assert facts, I only lay before the reader for his consideration such evidence as has occurred to me in the course of my reading;<sup>2</sup> and I may justly say with a late learned and worthy labourer in the thorny field of Scottish antiquities, "*Utinam tam facile vera invenire possem, quam falsa convincere.*"<sup>3</sup>

Some may perhaps think me too rigorous in giving no quarter to certain stories, which from their early youth they have taken pleasure in believing. If these stories are true, their truth will be the more firmly established by investigation; but if they are false, history ought by all means to be cleared of them, more particularly of those which appear to

<sup>1</sup> Except a few very short ones in the five first books, which it was necessary to have immediately under the eye for supplying the want of connection occasioned by the suppression of the context.

<sup>2</sup> In adducing authorities I have been careful to quote the earliest authors without encumbering the pages with the names of their followers: only when quoting *Fordun* I have generally added the parallel place in *Goodal's* edition of the *Scotichronicon*, because *Hearne's* edition of *Fordun's* own work is a scarce book.

<sup>3</sup> Lord Hailes, in p. 1 of his *Remarks on the history of Scotland*, published in 1773, to which this wish of Cicero is prefixed as a motto, could "hardly venture to express [his] doubts as to the historical evidence" of the antient alliance with France. But during the few years which have elapsed since he published that work, the mental illumination of Scotland has been great and rapid; and the study of history in particular has made such advances, that no one need now fear to give offence by clearing away the rubbish of fable, and restoring the truth of history as far as is practicable. "*Ne quid falsi dicere audeat, ne quid veri non audeat historicus.*"

have originated in malicious or interested calumny, such as the wickedness and tyranny of King Macbeth, the treachery of Menteth and Cumin, with others of the like stamp, my abhorrence of which may perhaps be in some degree heightened by the recollection of my own sufferings from malicious and interested falsehoods. But surely even scepticism, if such a name is to be given to a withholding of our assent where we see no grounds of belief, or to the detection of error, is preferable to a supine, lazy, and unmanly acquiescence in the belief of unfounded fiction, as a total privation of history is unquestionably preferable to the masses of fable and gross absurdity formerly called histories of Britain, Scotland, and Ireland, preceding the Christian æra. The deposition of the usurper *Falsehood*, who has for near three centuries reigned triumphant in Scottish history, at least makes room for the restoration of the lawful sovereign *Truth*; and even the starting of doubts may stimulate some who have better opportunities to researches, which may at length bring about that desirable event. If my labours shall have such an effect I shall think them well bestowed, and shall alwise esteem myself happy if I may in some small degree be instrumental in reforming Scotland from Hector Boyse:<sup>1</sup> “*Quid enim fortius desiderat anima quam veritatem?*”<sup>2</sup>

The short *Table of holidays*, which follows the notes, will

<sup>1</sup> See *Annals*, vol. ii. p. 224, *Note*. Justice to departed merit demands, that the reformation of Scotland from Hector Boyse, and the improvement of historic knowledge, which has consequently taken place in it, should in a great measure be ascribed to the valuable *Annals* and other works of LORD HAILES. I the more freely contribute my mite of the praise due to his historic merit, as even malice cannot pretend that it proceeds from any expectation of a return. Had he been alive, I should scarcely have presumed to say even thus much.

<sup>2</sup> Several of the notes are abridgments of essays written long ago, which have been occasionally revised and corrected during the course of many years.



sometimes save the reader the trouble of searching in calendars for dates long ago disused.

In the *Index* will be found catalogues of the Kings, Bishops, noble families, &c., every succeeding King, Bishop, or Chief of a family being distinguished by Italics; and where the succession of Kings, Earls, &c., is continuous or nearly so, the connection of each one with his predecessor, whose name is marked by the initial letter, is also ascertained, either from my author, or from the best authorities attainable. The actions of each person are arranged in order of time, and under one head, whatever variety of titles he may have had, so as to give a connected biographical sketch of his life. Thus the reader may find at one glance the whole information given by Wyntown concerning families or individuals, with the addition of their genealogical connection. Kings, Earls, &c., are also found under their own proper names in the alphabetical order; but not Bishops, they being never mentioned as concerned in any transactions foreign to their episcopal character. I have been as careful as possible not to omit any Scottish or English names.

The *Glossary*, which is usually subjoined to the author's work, is here prefixed to it, chiefly for the uniformity of the volumes, as the second would otherwise be so much larger than the first, owing to the great quantity of the eighth book and the necessary appendages already mentioned.

In a Glossary it is not satisfactory to a reader who desires to judge for himself and scorns to be put in leading-strings (and to such only do I wish to devote my labours) to see one word set after another as its explanation, for the justness of which he is obliged to rely on the infallibility of the glossarist, who, perhaps without any investigation of the nature and structure of the word or of its connection with the context in a sufficient number of examples, boldly puts down whatever will make grammatical sense in the passage before him, though

it may be very far from the meaning of his author. But when the reader sees before him the same word with little or no variation bearing the same meaning in the cognate languages, no doubt can remain of the justness of the interpretation.

In order to afford this satisfaction to the reader, I have selected such of the *synonyma* in the cognate or sororian languages, as are most clearly illustrative of the words to be explained. This, to be sure, is a very laborious task which I have imposed upon myself; but had I preferred sloth to exertion, and faith in others to my own endeavours to get as near to the fountain-head of knowledge as possible, I ought to have let alone the work altogether.

In selecting the kindred words I have rejected all far-fetched affinities, though many of them are ingeniously supported, and some of them may be true. I do not in any instance pretend to determine which are primitive words, and which derivative, or that any of them are *primitives*. Neither do I take any concern in the deduction of their genealogy from Noah's ark or the plains of Shinar.<sup>1</sup> All that I pretend to

<sup>1</sup> I have sometimes adduced Greek, and more frequently Latin words, as cognates; but it does not follow that the Scottish words are derived from them any more than they from the Scottish. There is reason to hope that a more rational system of philology will soon explode the schoolboy idea, which has for ages perverted the judgment of even learned men, and set them upon deriving all the languages of Europe from the Greek and Latin, but chiefly from the Greek. They surely imagined either that the Greeks peopled all Europe, or that all the nations of Europe were destitute of names for the most common things till they went to school in Greece. There is no reason to believe that a single word of the languages spoken by any of the antient nations in Britain could possibly be derived to them from the Greeks, who do not appear to have ever had any intercourse with this island. When the Christian religion was introduced, some Greek words peculiar to it and to the sciences came along with it, and these, to the best of my recollection, are the only Greek words to be found in Wyntown. Of later date are most of the terms of art, which have in like manner been received with the arts, or, from a partiality for the Greek language, been fabricated at home, the more expressive native words being discarded to make way for them: hence most

know is, that the words which I have brought together appear evidently, from their strong family likeness, to be of the same origin, or rather in most cases the very same words, when each is divested of its peculiar servile termination, which is therefore generally separated from the body of the word by a hyphen. Thus my Glossary, though containing the materials of a huge *Etymologicon*, is entirely free of etymology.

As a partial Dictionary of the language of Scotland, this Glossary, however inferior in other respects to the excellent one compiled by Mr. Ruddiman for Douglas's Virgil, has this material advantage of it, that most of the words in it belong to the genuine language of the country; whereas a very great proportion of the other consists of foreign words fabricated by Douglas himself.<sup>1</sup> Such words as occur in both Glossaries

of the books describing the fruits of the earth or the diseases of mankind, subjects which ought to be level to every comprehension, though they bear English titles, cannot be read by any, who have not studied these sciences, without the help of a Greek Lexicon.

The naturalizing of Latin words, perhaps through the medium of the French, was common in England, and most probably also in Scotland, long before Wyntown's time. The judicious reader will find no difficulty in distinguishing those which are descended of the Latin by the manner of their formation, from those with which it is only cognate; and here it is proper to observe, that many modern words, which we have received from the Latin, are in reality Gothic, an example of which is shewn in the Glossary, vo. *Thole*.

I beg leave to close this note with a childish story of myself. Soon after I began to learn Latin, another boy and I having been told that the most of the English language was derived from it, set ourselves to find out the words so derived; and we discovered that the English adjective *secure* was from the Latin noun *securis*, an *axe*! How many hundreds of pompous etymologies have no better foundation?

<sup>1</sup> Douglas's translation of Virgil's *Æneid* is the Scottish work best known to the learned beyond the limits of Scotland, having been often quoted and referred to as the standard of the Scottish language, even before the publication of Ruddiman's Glossary; and a wonderful work it is, being, according to Warton [vol. ii. p. 281], the first complete metrical translation of Virgil's *Æneid* (and indeed of any classic writer) done in Britain, and also in the opinion of several good judges the best. No part of his merit, however,

(and these are not near so many as might be expected) frequently have very different explanations, it being the business of a glossarist to give only those meanings of a word in which his author uses it. The little identity to be found in the two Glossaries is a circumstance which adds to the utility of both.

The *General Rules*, which precede the Glossary, also differ considerably from Mr. Ruddiman's, owing to the superior purity of the language in Wyntown's time, which will be obvious on a comparison of the vocables and construction with those of the Moeso-Gothic, Anglo-Saxon, and Islandic, some instances of which I have observed in the notes, and many more may be found in every page of the Glossary.

I have no doubt that the candid reader, considering this Glossary as an attempt, in which, I may say, I have had no predecessor, and moreover as being only an appendage, will think it entitled to some indulgence for its errors and deficiencies. The critic, who finds these very numerous, will do

consists in presenting a genuine specimen of the language, as will be obvious to any one who compares the language of Barber and Wyntown with his, and all of them with the most antient and genuine specimen of the Gothic preserved in the precious Gospels of Ulfila. Douglas was sensible that the use of exotic words was not a merit, but an inevitable defect in his work [see his *preface*, pp. 5, 9]; yet some of his admirers affect to praise him for this defect, which they call enriching the language. So the wine-makers of this country enrich the genuine juice of the grape with aloe-juice and other heterogeneous poisons.

It may be agreeable to those, who love to trace the history of literature, to see the following notice of a translation at least a full century before Douglas (but whether from a classic or not is unknown), which is in our author's Chronicle, B. I. ch. viii.

" In Ynd ar othir ferlyis sere,  
That I lewe for to rekyn here ;  
For tha ar tyl yhowre knowlage  
Translatyde welle in oure langage."

Q. If the original of this now lost translation was Solinus, in whose description of India there are many wonders ; or the pretended letter of Alexander to Aristotle, *De situ et mirabilibus India*, said to be translated by Cornelius Nepos from the Greek, which was a very common manuscript ?

a good service to the republic of letters if he will furnish a complete one; in doing which he may perhaps find even my poor attempt of some assistance to him. Those, whom their own studies have qualified to judge of such an undertaking, well know, that to do complete justice to it requires the assiduous labour of many years devoted to the study of philology, together with the abilities of an IHRE.

I wish it were in my power to give any thing which might deserve to be called *the Life of Wyntown*; but from want of materials I can do little more than draw into one point of view what may be gathered from his own work.

ANDROW OF WYNTOWN appears to have been born about the middle of the long reign of David II., as he complains of the infirmities of old age when engaged in the first copy of his Chronicle.<sup>1</sup> It is quite unknown of what family he was, though conjecture might venture to suppose him a relation of Alane of Wyntown, whose marriage with the heiress of Setown, mistaken by the historiographer of the family, and misrepresented or omitted by the compilers of peerages, is related by him. [*see* B. VIII. ch. xli. *and note*], and from him by Bower.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See B. IX. Prol., which is the same in the Cotton manuscript transcribed from the first copy.

<sup>2</sup> Besides this Alane and his posterity, mentioned by the transcriber of the Cupar manuscript of the *Scotichronicon* [*v. Sc. Chr.* vol. ii. p. 337, *no'e*], I find the following men of the name, who were all cotemporary with our author.

*Ingrame of Winton*, appointed by David II. keeper of the castle of Kil-drummy in 1362 [*see* B. VIII. ch. xlvi. 7165].

*Willielmus de Wintonia*, who died on his pilgrimage to Mount Sinay. [*Rot. Scotia*, 37mo. *Edw. III. apud Ayloff*, p. 226.] If this be not the son of Alane and the Lady of Setown, and his death is too early for him to be called "veteranus" [*v. Sc. Chr. ut supra*], the pilgrimage to the holy land may be said to have been a family disease among the Wyntowns.

*Eymunde de Wyntona*, witness in a charter by the Earl of Ross, conveying the lands of Gerloch to Paul Mactyre, dated at Delgheny 5th April 1366.

He was a Canon regular of the priory of St. Andrews, which was so great and flourishing, that it had under its jurisdiction the priories of St. Serf's insh in Loch Levin, Portmoak on the north bank of the same Loch, both in Kinross-shire, Pittenween in the east part of Fife, the isle of May in the Firth of Forth, and Monymusk in Aberdeenshire. The Prior of St. Andrews was moreover entitled to take precedence in parliament, not only of all Priors, but even of all Abbats, in honour of the supremacy of the episcopal see, with which he was connected. [*Sc. Chr.* vol. i. p. 367; and note on B. IX. ch. vi. 555.] In or before the year 1395,<sup>1</sup> our author was by the favour of his fellow Canons elected Prior of the monastery of St. Serf's insh in Loch Levin, one of the most ancient religious establishments in Scotland, which was founded by Brud, son of Dargard, King of the Pichts, probably about the year 700, and enriched

*Johannes Wenton*, Armiger de Scotia, who has a safe conduct from Henry v. to come to the presence of him and his dear cousin James, King of the Scots, in London, 4th October 1421 [*Fæd.* vol. x. p. 154].

Out of these a genealogist would easily find relations and frame a pedigree for our Wyntown, which might with some degree of probability be grafted on the Earls of Winton or Winchester, in England, who, by the marriage of Alan of Galloway's daughter, got vast possessions, and the important office of Great Constable in Scotland. It is certain that the cadets of a great family often assumed the title of their Chief as a designation or surname, and the fiery dragon born by the Earls of Winchester in England and the Earls of Winton in Scotland is, according to the rules of heraldry, a presumption of affinity. Whether a partiality for the family of Winchester induced our author superfluously to detail their genealogy, along with that of Alan's daughters, who were of the royal blood, I know not.

The only family of the name mentioned in *Nisbet's Heraldry* [vol. i. pp. 142, 363] is stiled of *Strathmartin*.

<sup>1</sup> In 1395 "Andreas de Wynton, Prior insule lacus de Levin" was present with others at a perambulation for dividing the baronies of Kirkness and Lochor "in presentia serenissimi principis Roberti Ducis Albanie." In 1406 he is designed "Canonicus Sancti Andree, Prior prioratus insule Sancti Servani infra lacum de Levin." These notices are partly from the Chartulary of St. Andrews, and partly from extracts taken from a quarto volume of manuscript collections belonging to Mr. Henry Malcolm, an episcopal minister

with many ample possessions by the Kings of Scotland and Bishops of St Andrews.<sup>1</sup>

Schyr Jhone of the Wemyss, ancestor of the Earls of Wemys, was one of his particular friends, to whom he appears to have considered himself as under great obligations. It was at his request that he undertook his Chronicle [B. I. *Prol.* 54], which was finished between the 3d of September 1420 and the return of King James from England in April 1424, as appears by Robert Duke of Albany being mentioned as dead, and the prayer for the prosperity of his children in B. IX. ch. xxvi. 2782, et seqq. Indeed, from the tenor of this chapter, it is pretty evident that it was written very soon after the death of Duke Robert, and that it once stood as the conclusion of the work; for the chapter following it, which is quite foreign to the history of Scotland, may be presumed to have been added afterwards, especially if the marriage of John of Bavaria was not earlier than 1424. [*See Notes*, B. IX. ch. xxvi. 2849, and ch. xxvii. 3321.]

While our author was engaged in his work, some unknown person of a genius similar to his own, sent him the history

at Ballingry before the revolution, who died at Cupar in Fife about the year 1730, by George Chalmers, Esq., whose communication of both of them, and of the notice concerning Eymund de Wynton in the preceding note is a part of his many kind attentions to this publication and to me.

Innes [p. 622] mentions "several authentick acts or publick instruments" of Wyntown as Prior from 1395 till 1413 in Extracts from the Register of the Priory of St. Andrews in the possession of the Earl of Panmure. These concurring testimonies make it certain that he was Prior in 1395; and yet in Extracts from the same Register in the Harleian library, No. 4628, f. 2 b, there is noted a charter "per Jacobum priorem S. Andree de Loch Leven, anno 1396," which must be a mistake; and indeed this manuscript is very carelessly written, so by no means to be set in competition with the copy examined by Innes.

<sup>1</sup> See B. I. *Prol.* B. V. ch. xii. 5228, and Excerpts from the Earl of Panmure's manuscript of the Register of the Priory of St. Andrews, published in *Crawford's Officers*, pp. 428 et seqq., containing the donations and some curious notices concerning antient manners and customs extracted from an old volume written "*antiquo Scotorum idiomate*."

from the birth of David II. to the death of Robert II., apparently written, or rather finished, in the beginning of the reign of Robert III. [*See* B. IX. ch. x. 1118], which having examined and approved, he gladly incorporated into his own work. [*See* B. VIII. ch. xix.; B. IX. ch. x. 1153.] This ample contribution is composed in the same style and same kind of verse with his own work; so that without the least breach of uniformity, it gives us the singular advantage of having the last eighty-three years of the history composed by two writers, who lived during the greatest part of the time which they wrote of.

Before Wyntown's time the history of the Scots had been plunged into confusion almost inextricable by an insatiable and ignorant rage for antiquity, which placed the reign of Fergus 1200 years before that of Kenneth Mac-Alpin, whom they made only the tenth in descent from him, thus involving themselves in the monstrous absurdity of allowing 120 years to each generation. Wyntown saw and felt the dilemma, but not having sufficiently informed himself from antient records, he could see no way of getting rid of it, and fairly gave it up to "othir of mare sufficians." [*See* B. IV. ch. viii. xix. *in* V. R.]

Having afterwards obtained better information, he found it expedient to give a second improved copy of the Chronicle with the important correction, which by enumerating the years of Fergus and his successors reduces his æra pretty near to the truth, being even a little below it;<sup>1</sup> though at the same time he could not drop the notion that the Scots were in Scotland 245 years before the Picts. But he knew nothing of the

<sup>1</sup> The reigns contained in B. IV. ch. viii. amount to 195 years; the reign of Ewan or Heatgan by *Reg. S. And.* is 16 years, which numbers subtracted from 741, the year in which Ewan died, place the accession of Fergus in 530, which is too late by 27 years.

The transcripts from this corrected copy of Wyntown are much scarcer than those from the first one. Innes, who had examined many, never saw any but the one in the Royal library. The Harleian manuscript is another.



forty-four or (thirty-nine) Kings preceding Fergus, nor of his interpolated successors, and in short has the happiness to be ignorant of many of the stories, which have long been deemed essential points of faith in Scottish history, but are now vanishing like mist before the increasing sunshine of reason.

Fordun, our author's cotemporary and fellow labourer (though they were unknown to each other) fell upon a method of settling the chronology of Fergus very easily by fairly splitting him into two Kings, one of whom he places 100 years before his due time, and the other 330 years before the Christian æra, leaving however the names, actions, and characters of the Kings between his two Fergusses to be supplied from the "fine fancy" of Hector Boyse, though he is particular enough in the history of the imaginary Kings, interpolated among the successors of Fergus, which he in vain attempts to authenticate from Bede and other authors of credit. These fictitious Kings constitute the grossest fault in Fordun's work, which, except in this instance, where the ambition of false antiquity *for the honour of Scotland* has carried him off his feet, is in general faithfully compiled from the best materials he could obtain.<sup>1</sup> From a comparison of Fordun and Wyntown, who may be considered as two witnesses ignorant of the evidence given by each other, we may obtain a pretty just view of the unsettled and inaccurate idea, which the Scots entertained about the conclusion of the fourteenth century of their early history.

It is probable that Wyntown did not very long survive the final conclusion of his work; for, as I have already observed, he reckoned himself an old man when engaged in it; and in-

<sup>1</sup> The reader will please to advert, that I speak of Fordun's own work, as published by Hearne, and partly by Gale, but not of the *Scotichronicon* published by Goodal, which the continuator has made almost his own by interpolations and additions. This distinction ought to be carefully attended to by all who study the history of Scotland.

deed he could be no less, for he had then presided over his priory about thirty years, perhaps longer; and we may take it for granted that he was not a young man when he was elected to that dignity.

The character of Wyntown as an historian is in a great measure common to the other historical writers of his age, who generally admitted into their works the absurdity of tradition along with authentic narrative, and often without any mark of discrimination, esteeming it a sufficient standard of historic fidelity to narrate nothing but what they found written by others before them. Indeed, as connection of parts, uniformity of subject, and strict investigation of authorities were little known or studied in those ages, it is very fortunate that they did compile their works in that crude manner, for thereby we have the advantage of often finding in these authors genuine transcripts from more antient authorities, of which their extracts are the only existing remains.<sup>1</sup> Had they, who after Wyntown assumed the office of historians of Scotland, followed his example in adhering strictly to authorities, and expatiated less in the enchanted wilderness of "*beautiful genius and fine fancy*," the history might have run in a much clearer stream than it does at present.

The early writers of various ages and countries seem to have agreed in a lazy custom of referring their readers to the works of others for great portions of the history which they themselves professed to give. Thus Ennius omits the relation of the first Punic war, because it had already been written by Nævius, who lived about forty years before him. So Robert of Gloucester (p. 487) and Robert of Brunne (p. 205), the two earliest writers of English history in English, refer their readers to the romance of *Richard Coeur de Lion*. So Barber (p. 340)

<sup>1</sup> See Montaigne's approbation of these simple historians, and particularly of Froissart. *Essais*, L. ii. ch. 10.

passes over the particulars of a battle because then sung in songs by the young women. In like manner Wyntown passes lightly over the history of Alexander the Great, the wars of the Saxons with the Britons, the actions of William Walays and of Robert the Brus, and the origin of the Stewarts, because they are

“Contenyd in othir bukis aere.”

This way of sending the reader to other books for some of the most important parts of the work proposed must have been particularly distressing, where books were so scarce and inaccessible, as they undoubtedly were in Scotland before the invention of printing.<sup>1</sup>

A contrary fault may perhaps be objected to Wyntown, that he sometimes runs into descriptions more minute and diffuse than are consistent with the rules of writing history; in answer to which it is sufficient to say that these rules were unknown in his age. Such descriptions were the defect perhaps more properly speaking the beauty of several early historians: by them Snorro, the venerable Herodotus of the north, and Froissart, the history-painter of France, England and Scotland, who, like our Wyntown, had the courage to write history in their native languages, bring us home to the scenes they

<sup>1</sup> Books, and particularly historical ones, were very scarce in Scotland in the ages preceding our author, as appears by the small number of authorities quoted by him (which are subjoined to the preface [to be given in vol. iii.]) and his lamenting the little assistance he had in his general history from preceding authors (see B. I. *Prolog.* 115): nor are the historians quoted by Fordun in his own work very numerous, though he is said to have travelled through England in quest of books and materials for his history. This need not be wondered at, when we observe, how very scarce books were even in England and France at the same time. (See *Warton*, vol. i., *Preliminary Dissertation* ii.) Printing was not yet invented, nor had the Turks, by taking possession of Constantinople, driven the treasures of Greek and Roman literature into the western parts of Europe. A modern reader surrounded by his library of many thousand printed books must compassionate the distress of those poor authors who attempted to rear up an historical fabric with so few materials.

describe, and make us take an interest in the characters they draw. If the succession of Kings and the relation of their battles be the body of history, the progress of the human mind in arts and knowledge, and a true delineation of manners so different from our own, as appears, for example, in the justing at Berwick in 1388, unquestionably constitute the very soul of it.

If we except one severe sentence extorted from him by the cruelties of Edward I., and a reflection upon the English in consequence of the seizure of Prince James, Wyntown nowhere runs into that abuse and contempt of the enemies of his country, which disgrace the writings of many of his contemporaries; but takes every occasion to bestow due praise on their gallantry and bravery in war. The same liberality of sentiment induces him to mention other writers, and particularly Barber, in the most respectful manner. If he shows himself a very zealous son of the Church, in taking all occasions to advance the power and dignity of the clergy, and to maintain that superiority over the civil power, which they claimed as a divine right (see B. VI. ch. ii. iv. ix., etc.); we must remember that in that age even the laity considered devotion to the Church as the quintessence of religion and virtue, and the surest passport to the joys of heaven.

Historians have frequently declined bringing their works quite down to the time of writing, and perhaps it was rather dangerous for truth to tread too close upon the heels of time.<sup>1</sup> Whatever was his motive, Wyntown has concluded his Chronicle of Scotland at least fourteen years before the time of writing the twenty-sixth chapter of the ninth book.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Tiberii, Caiique et Claudii ac Neronis res, florentibus ipsis ob metum falsæ; postquam occiderant, recentibus odiis compositæ sunt."

[*Taciti Annal.* lib. i. c. 1.]

<sup>2</sup> In the same manner Bower breaks off at the death of James I., though he appears to have been engaged in his work in the fourteenth year of James II.:

Hitherto I have considered Wyntown only as an historian, in which character he certainly stands higher than as a poet ; but as his work is in ryme, he is also classed among the poets of Scotland, and he is in point of time the second of the few early ones whose works we possess, Barber being his only extant predecessor.<sup>1</sup> Though his work in general partakes little or nothing of the nature of poetry, unless ryme can be said to constitute poetry, yet he now and then throws in some touches of true poetic description, and paints the scenery of his battles with so exact a pencil, that a person who is on the spot may point out the various scenes of each particular action ; and sometimes like Homer, whose poems he never saw, he bestows a portion of his work in expatiating on the achievements of a particular hero, as in B. VIII. ch. xxxvi., where the actions of William Douglas are related.

Wyntown's verse consists of eight syllables, though, like his cotemporaries in England as well as in Scotland, he does not adhere strictly to his measure, lines even of ten, and others of only six syllables, frequently occurring. In only a very few instances he uses alliteration, that dreadful fetter upon the sense of antient poetry, which about his time was so common, especially in Scotland and the north of England, that short poems, and even some of considerable length, were entirely composed in it. Neglect of equality in the lines, alliteration, and violent transpositions of the natural order of the language, which are now considered as unpardonable blemishes in poetical compo-

Mair finishes with the marriage of James III., fifty years before the time when he wrote : and Boyse concludes his first edition almost a century before his own time. Several of the English historians have also declined writing the actions of their cotemporaries.

<sup>1</sup> Gordon, the author of the poetical history of King Robert, in his preface mentions a manuscript poem on the same subject, which he had the use of, written in rymes like Chaucer's by Peter Fenton in 1369, and consequently a few years earlier than Barber's poem. It is worthy of remark that Wyntown, though he often quotes Barber, has never once mentioned Fenton. Q. if there is no mistake in the date.

Specimens of the writing of the three oldest  
Manuscripts of Wyntoun's Chronicle?

Royal MS. 17.D. XX. f. 191 b.

Queney alsand our kyng was ded  
yt Scotland had in lull and le  
away was send off all and bode  
off wyne and way off game and glw

Cotton MS. Nero. D. XI. f. 139 a.

Queney alsand our kyng was ded  
yt Scotland had in lull and le  
away was send off all and bode  
off wyne and way off game and glw

Advocate's MS. A. 7. 1.

Queney alsand our kyng was ded  
yt Scotland had in lull and le  
away was send off all and bode  
off wyne and way off game and glw



sition, were esteemed beauties by the antient Anglo-Saxon and other Gothic poets.<sup>1</sup>

Wyntown's work is entirely composed in couplets without the intervention of a single stanza. It frequently happens that two couplets together end with similar rymes, which in those days was not accounted a defect.

The Royal manuscript, marked 17, D. xx, which, as already observed, is greatly superior to all other known manuscripts of Wyntown,<sup>2</sup> appears to have been transcribed for George Barclay of Achrody;<sup>3</sup> and very soon after the autograph of the cor-

<sup>1</sup> Hickes has collected several examples of alliteration in the Greek and Roman poets [*g. as.* p. 195].

<sup>2</sup> See the account of this manuscript by Innes, p. 624.

<sup>3</sup> F. 262 b, being the outside or cover of one of the *quairs*, has no part of Wyntown's work upon it, but has the following lines written apparently by retainers of the gentleman, for whom the manuscript was transcribed, which obliged the transcriber to pass to f. 263.

At the top of the page in large writing :

This buik dois perteine  
To ane rycht honora<sup>n</sup> man  
Georg Barclay of Achrody  
And mony wther propirly  
Brother german is he  
To S<sup>r</sup> Patrik of Tollie  
Cheiff of Barclays in Scotland  
And mony guid deid hes haid  
in hand

Under which in a small and very bad hand are the following :

	Barclay
The mariage of that Lady	S <sup>r</sup> Patrik <sup>a</sup> of Tollie
Indenit w <sup>i</sup> guid qualitie	Cheiff of that name I testifie
Movit hir husband Toly than	As in his Scheild ye may sie
Into his armis to d . . . .	Twa Corsis weiris he
Q <sup>r</sup> corsis twa befor hand	The thrid be resone quhy
For he was . . . .	That hous marit properly
. . . . . the thrid to bere	Ane dochter of Gartly
	W <sup>t</sup> gryt hono <sup>r</sup> and dignity
	Q <sup>u</sup> than was Barclay
	& was ane Kny <sup>t</sup> ry <sup>t</sup> worthy

The left hand column, which is to be read last, is in some places so blotted as to be unintelligible.



rected copy, as several good judges of manuscripts have pronounced it to be of the beginning of the fifteenth century, and some have placed it even before the year 1400. As we know that it could not possibly be written earlier than in 1420 or 1421, the opinion of these gentlemen may warrant a belief that it is not latter than 1430, and no manuscript in the language of Scotland older than it is known to be extant. To enable the reader to compare the writing with coeval monuments, a specimen of the hand is herewith given.<sup>1</sup>

The writing, of which a specimen is engraved, continues till the last chapter of the eighth book, after which two different transcribers have been employed, who wrote worse hands; and both, particularly the last one, have taken the common liberty of modernizing the language, whence the last part of it is sometimes inferior to the Cotton manuscript for purity. The Rubrics, which are in red and in a hand like black print, are also the work of a more modern writer, at least if we may judge from some innovations in the spelling. This kind of hand, wherever it appears, is distinguished in the edition by black letter, which, though disagreeable to the eye when long continued, is useful as a distinction. The illuminated letters of the manuscript are, as already observed, represented in the edition by open capitals. There is no punctuation in the whole manuscript.

The volume consists of sixteen *quairs*, each containing eighteen leaves in folio of thick paper, inclosed in a sheet of

<sup>1</sup> In this writing many of the letters are of the same form with others, e.g. *l*, *el*, and *w*; *c*, *t*, and sometimes *i*; *b* and *v*; *y* and *th*; *bb* and *tb*; *f* and *s*; *ft* and *s*; *b* and *l*; *m*, *n*, *u*, *v*, *i* not to be known but by the sense; *ff* generally written for *f*, e.g. *ffylfe*; *ll* for *l*, e.g. *bllyssyn*; and the character for *s* so like *ss*, that *Ross* to a reader unacquainted with the writing will seem *Rossa*. These confusions of the letters, and the frequent contractions, account for the prodigious discrepancies we find in manuscripts, and show how necessary it is for a transcriber to know the language and the subject. The custom of writing *ff* for *f* was common with old men in the present age.

vellum, having at the bottom of the last page the first words of the following one for a direction to the binder, like the signatures in printed books; for no numbers of the folios were originally marked.<sup>1</sup> Thus, at the end and beginning of the *quairs* there are alwise two leaves of vellum, which in the edition are marked with V added to the number of the folio on the margin. Though now bound in one volume, it has formerly been in three, the first and third of which have been damaged by water on the edges of the leaves.

Wyntown's Chronicle is followed by a short Chronicle of Scotland in Scottish prose, written by an unknown author about 1530;<sup>2</sup> and after that there is a Scottish translation or paraphrase of the letter pretended to be written by Prester John to the Emperor Frederick which concludes the volume.<sup>3</sup>

Several other names besides that of George Barclay, are written in this book; but whether they have been owners of it

<sup>1</sup> Some person has numbered a few folios at the beginning; and I have numbered the rest with black lead, writing with ink on books belonging to the Museum not being permitted.

<sup>2</sup> The age of this Chronicle appears from an observation in f. 302, that the Conquest of the Pichts in "aucht hundyr xxx and od" was 700 years ago. This brings it after 1530: but 700 being a round number we cannot pretend to say that the computation is accurate. This author is most ample, where he has no foundation to go upon, in the fabulous settlement of the Scots, which, he contends, took place long before the birth of Brutus, or even the Trojan war: he more rationally explodes the conquests of Arthur, who, he observes, could not defend his own; and he takes notice of the hereditary right of the Scottish Kings as heirs of Edmund Ironside, to the crown of England. Having got through the anti-historical part, he gives brief notes of remarkable events with their dates down to the year 1482.

<sup>3</sup> This letter begins thus:—"John callit Prest King amang all the Kingis of the Erde tyl ane nobyl man Frederik Empriour of Rome salutis gretynge."—He invites him to be his Steward and Viceroy, and tells him that he is both King and Priest, but values himself chiefly on his priestly character. Then follows an account of a palace built of gold and jewels by his father, which satisfies the hunger of those who enter it without the use of food: after which he describes the neighbouring nations, viz., a nation of cannibals subject to him, whom Alexander the Great shut up between the hills Goth

is unknown, and of little consequence. In the early part of the last century it has belonged to Sir William Le-Neve, when he was York Herald, whose signature and arms appear in several places of it.<sup>1</sup> After him, but whether immediately or not, I know not, the King became proprietor of it, from whose library it came with many others into the British Museum, where it now is.

The manuscript in the Cotton library, marked Nero, D, XI, is, after the Royal, superior for age and purity of language, not only to all other manuscripts of Wyntown, but even to all others extant in the language of Scotland.<sup>2</sup> Its being posterior to the Royal can only be inferred from the proper names and the language being in many instances more modern, examples of which may be found in the contents of the seventh book, in the prologue and contents of the eighth, and in the various readings; for the writing, of which a specimen is given in the plate, though very different from that of the Royal, is in

and Magoth: these he sometimes turns out against his enemies, and then shuts them up again between the hills, where they are to remain till the coming of Antichrist. Another people in the sandy desert have "the clwis of ane hora." In the desert is also "the Vemen land" or land of the Amazons, who are 100,000 warlike ladies on horse besides foot. His whole land is surrounded by the river Gihon, which flows from Paradise; and beyond it is the land of the pigmies, "mennikynis lik barnes of fywe or sax yeris ald," who are Christians. Near them are monsters half men and half horse, and other monsters called Sagittaris, who eat raw flesh and sleep upon trees. In another desert there are Unicorns, which can be caught by none but a virgin.—The end is wanting. There is a copy of this letter in French in the King's library, 20, A, XI; and there is a quotation from it in the Chronicle of Melros, p. 237 of the edition.

<sup>1</sup> In order to ascertain the identity of the signature I went to the Herald's college, where Edmund Lodge, Esq., Lancaster Herald, with great politeness took the trouble of shewing me many signatures of this gentleman in the official books.

<sup>2</sup> The next to it for antiquity is probably either the manuscript of Barber, dated 1489, in the Advocates' Library; or the translation of the Psalms in Scottish metre, No. 278 of the manuscripts bequeathed by Archbishop Parker to Corpus-Christi College in Cambridge.

the opinion of judges not distinguishable from it in point of antiquity ; and indeed the difference of a few years in writing cannot be ascertained by the inspection even of a *Casely*. In this copy the lines are divided by a short sloping mark, not for the grammatical division of the sense, but for a kind of musical rest in reading, examples of which may be seen in the various readings, B. IV. ch. viii. xix. The book is written in folio, on paper folded so as to make a long and narrow page. It has been in very bad keeping ; several leaves at the beginning and at the end are lost [*see V. R.*] and the writing at the bottoms of many leaves, which have been rotted with water, is supplied by a latter hand upon slips of paper pasted on. When it was rebound by Sir Robert Cotton, most of the inner margins have been strengthened with guards and some marginal notes, which however appear to have been of no value, have been partly cut off<sup>1</sup>

The next manuscript of Wyntown in order of time is that which is marked A, 7, 1 in the library of the Faculty of Advocates at Edinburgh. It is written in folio upon paper ; and the writing, of which a specimen is given in the plate, is supposed to be of the beginning of the sixteenth century. It varies greatly in the numeration of the chapters from the Royal, as it does also in many parts of the text, and in the orthography, which has been much *mended* by the transcriber. Unfortunately it has lost many of its leaves, particularly from the middle of the sixth<sup>2</sup> to near the end of the seventh<sup>3</sup> chapter, and all after the middle of the tenth<sup>4</sup> chapter of the ninth book.

<sup>1</sup> This is the Scottish manuscript, from which Selden and Hearne have published extracts ; [*See Notes*, B. VI. ch. vi. ; B. VII. ch. ix. 2641] and which Smith in the Catalogue of the Cotton Library, Nicolson [*Scottish Hist. Lib.* p. 129] and Mackenzie [*Lives of Scottish Writers*, vol. i. p. 475] describe as a history of the Kings in old Scottish verse. For want of the beginning none of them knew the name of the author.

<sup>2</sup> Ninth.

<sup>3</sup> Twenty-first.

<sup>4</sup> Twenty-third in the Royal.

It came into the library, while it was under the care of the learned Mr. Thomas Ruddiman, and has probably been purchased by him :<sup>1</sup> but nothing is known of its former owners, further than that the name of John Ærskine is written on a vellum leaf at the beginning.

Next to this is another manuscript belonging to the same library, and marked A, 1, 13, which is in folio, neatly written on paper about the end of the sixteenth century. It is abridged in many places, and more modernized and corrupted throughout than A, 7, 1. The transcriber, though he wrote the author's division of his work into nine books, has neglected it, and carried on the series of chapters, 212 in number, to the end. Annexed to it is the short Chronicle in prose, which is subjoined to the Royal. This manuscript was the property of Sir James Balfour, and is marked, as all his books were, with *Denmilne*, the name of the place where he kept his library : it afterwards belonged to Sir Robert Sibbald, after whose death it was purchased by the Faculty of Advocates, and was for some time the only copy they had.<sup>2</sup>

These three manuscripts have been transcribed from the first unimproved copy of Wyntown's work.

Another manuscript, though not deserving notice for its age or correctness, yet must be noted as being perhaps the only

<sup>1</sup> Ruddiman's quotations of Wyntown, as appears particularly from his note on Buchanan's history, p. 159, A, 11, are from the manuscript A, 1, 13, and show that this one had not come into his hand in 1715.

<sup>2</sup> This is the manuscript so erroneously described by Mackenzie in his life of our author, as being in nine books. The notes by Sir James Balfour, which he mentions in a manner that must make us suppose them very interesting, are chiefly marginal contents, and of no value. See Note on B. VI. ch. vi.

The account of these two manuscripts is taken from the very obliging communications of Alexander Fraser Tytler, Esq., to whom this work is also indebted for many collations from them (accompanied with an attestation of their accuracy by Mr. Brown, the librarian), which have enabled me to correct some errors of the copies in the museum.

one, besides the Royal, which contains the author's improvements, and as having been of some little use in the present edition. It is No. 6909 of the Harleian library in the Museum, and has been written about the middle of the last century, upon sixty-seven sheets of coarse paper in quarto. The transcriber has taken great liberties in altering and abridging. Along with the foreign matter he has omitted the short notices of the Pictish Kings, the reign of Macbeth, and some other parts of the history of Scotland, his idea of which has led him frequently to correct Wyntown from Hector Boyse. This manuscript seems to have been copied from one written in the abbey of Kelso; for in the rubric of the chapter answering to B. VII. ch. vi., King David is called "St. David our founder," and the one answering to B. VIII. ch. xxvi. informs us, that William of Dalgernow, Abbat of Kelso, was tutor to David II. during his residence in France; a piece of intelligence which I find nowhere else.<sup>1</sup>

These are the manuscripts, from the first of which as the standard text, and the others as occasional auxiliaries, THE ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL OF SCOTLAND is now for the first time presented to the public. I am persuaded, that, notwithstanding all my endeavours to execute the work with propriety, many mistakes and omissions must have escaped my attention,

<sup>1</sup> There have been, and perhaps there are now, many other manuscripts of Wyntown. (See *Innes*, pp. 624, 683.) There was one in the possession of Mr. Kirton, a clergyman of Edinburgh; one at or near Venice (see *Note I. prol.* 57); and Mr. Macleod, a clergyman in the north part of Scotland, is said to have an excellent one; but the author of my information does not speak of it with certainty, and one can never be too cautious in reports concerning manuscripts. In consequence of a report, that there was a copy of Wyntown in the valuable collection of manuscripts belonging to the Marquis of Lansdown, I applied to his lordship for permission to collate some passages, who had the goodness to send a messenger to inform me that if he had had such a manuscript I should have been wellcome to the use of it; but that, from a search made in consequence of my application, it appeared, that there was no manuscript of Wyntown in his possession.

and I am confident that those who know what a labour it is to do justice to such a work, and consequently are most capable of discovering my errors, will be the most ready to look upon them with indulgence, and to consider them as the effect, not of carelessness, but of that imperfection to which all human undertakings are liable, and perhaps none more than the first publication of a work in an obsolete language with proper elucidations.

[DAVID MACPHERSON, 1795.]

THE FYRST BUKE  
OF THE  
ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL  
OF SCOTLAND.





THE  
ORGYNALE CRONYKIL  
OF SCOTLAND.

---

[*Weir followis the Prolog, but faill  
Off the Cornkillis callit Originale.*]

Fol. 1.      **A**S men ar be thare qualyteys  
Inclynyd tyl dywersyteys,  
Mony yharnys for tyll here  
Off tymys that befor thaim were,  
The statys chawngyde ande the greis.  
Quhar-for off swylk antyqwyteys,  
Thai that set hale thare delyte  
Gest or story for to wryte,  
Owthir in metyre, or in prose,  
Fluryside fayrly thaire purpose  
Wytht queynt and curyous circumstance,  
To rays hartis in plesance,  
And the heraris tyll excyte  
Be wyt, or wyll, tyll thaire delyte.  
    As Gwido de Columpna qwhille,  
The poete Omere, and Vyrgylle,  
Fayrly fowrmyde thaire tretis,  
And curyowsly dytyde thare storis.  
Sum oyside bot in plane manere

The dedis dwne, and thare matere 20  
 To wryte, as Dares of Frygy  
 Wrote of the Trojany's the story,  
 Bot in to plane and opyne style,  
 But curyous wordis or suttyle.

Allsua set I myne intent,  
 My wyt, my wyll, and myne talent,  
 Fra that I sene hade storis sere  
 In Cronnyklys, quhare thai wryttyne were,  
 Thare matere in tyll fowrme to drawe  
 Off Latyne, in tyll Ynglys sawe. 30  
 For Romans to rede is delytabyll,  
 Suppose that thai be quhyle bot fabyll,  
 And set tyll this I gaue my wylle,  
 My wyt, I kene, swa skant thare-tylle,  
 That I dowt sare thaim tyll offende  
 That kane me, and my werk amende,  
 Gyue I wryte owthir mare or les  
 Than the storys berys wytne :  
 For, as I sayde, rwde is my wyte  
 And sympyll to put all in wryte, 40  
 And clerly bryng thame tyll knowlage  
 Off Latyne in tyll owre langage,  
 Tyll ilke mannys wnderstandyng  
 For syndrynes of thare chawngyng :  
 Swa throuch folly or nycete,  
 I dowt confowndyt for to be.

Bot Lordys, gyue youre curtasy,  
 Forbere me in this juperty,  
 And fra thaire lethe walde me defende,  
 That kane reproue, and wyll noucht mende, 50  
 Hawande excusyde my sympylnes,  
 Syne that I set my besynes

Fol. 1. b.

Tyll all yhoure plesans generally :  
 Suppos this tretys sympylly  
 I made at the instans of a larde  
 That hade my serwys in his warde,  
 Schyr Jhone of the Wemys be rycht name,  
 Ane honest Knycht, and of gude fame,  
 Suppos hys Lordschype lyk noucht be  
 Tyll gret statys in eqwalyte : 60  
 He mon of nede be partenere  
 Off qwhat kyne blame, that I sulde bere ;  
 Syne for byddyng at hys cownsaile  
 Off det I spendyt my trawalle ;  
 For all honest det sulde be  
 Qwyth wyth possiblyte :  
 And bowsumnes, that as the wys  
 Sayis, bettyre is than sacrifyis :  
 For in sacryfyis, the slayne,  
 And noucht the slayare, mon thole the payne : 70  
 Swa that the slaare hawe the mede,  
 The payne is soft, he tholys, in dede.  
 Than sulde hys mede wytth rycht be mare,  
 That suffiryde in hym self the sare,  
 Quhare bowsumnes mayis fredwme threlle  
 Lykyng wndyr awe to dwelle,  
 Noucht as bondage wndyr lawe,  
 Bot that lykyng grace sulde knawe.  
 I than, set in lyk assay,  
 Wylfull is my det to pay : 80  
 Sympyll or sufficeand, quhether it be,  
 To bowsumnes ay yhelde I me.

And for I wyll nane bere the blame  
 Off my defawte, [this] is my name

Be baptysyne, ANDROWE of WYNTOWNE,  
 Off Sanctandrowys a Chanowne  
 Regular, bot noucht for-thi  
 Off thaim all the lest worthy :  
 Bot off thare grace and thaire faʋoure  
 I wes, but meryt, made Priowre  
 Off the Ynche, wythin Lochlewȳne;  
 Haʋand tharof my tytill ewȳne  
 Off Sanctandrowys dyocesy,  
 Betwene the Lomownde and Bennarty.

90

The tytill of this Tretis hale,  
 I wyll be caulde ORYGYNALE :  
 For that begynnyng sall mak clere  
 Be playne proces owre matere.  
 As of Angelis, and of Man  
 Fyrst to rys the kynde began :  
 And how, eftyr thare creatioun,  
 Men grewe in tyll successyowne,  
 Wyde sprede in to thare greys,  
 Thare statys, and thare qwalyteis,  
 Tyll the tyme at Nynws Kyng  
 Ras, and tuk the goʋernyng  
 Off Babylon and Assyry.

100

Fra hyme syne dystyunctly  
 It is my purpos tyll afferme  
 This Tretis in tyll certane terme,  
 Haldand tyme be tym the date,  
 As Cronyklerys be-for me wrate,  
 Reqwyrande the correctioun  
 Off grettare of perfectyoun.  
 For few wrytys I redy fande,  
 That I couth drawe to my warande :

110

Fol. 2.

Part off the Bybyll wytth that, that Perys  
 Comestor ekyde in hys yherys ;  
 Orosius, and Frere Martyne,  
 Wytth Ynglis and Scottis storys syne, 120  
 And othir incedeyns sere,  
 Acordand lyk tyll oure matere.  
 To this my wyt is walowide dry  
 But floure or froyte ; bot noucht for-thi  
 To furthhyre fayrly this purpos  
 I seke the sawowre of that ros  
 That spanysys, spredys, and evyre spryngys,  
 In plesans of the Kyng of Kyngis.

**The Chapterys off the fyrst Buke.**

- i. **B**E dywysiownys of this Tretis.
- ii. Off Angelis.
- iii. Off Mannys fyrst creatioun.
- iiii. Off the slawchtere of Abelle.
- v. Off Kayinnys generatyown.
- vi. Off Sethys generatyown.
- vii. Off Geawndys.
- viii. Off the Arke off Noe, and off the Spate.
- ix. Off the foure Kynrykis pryncipale.
- x. How Ynde and othir landys lyis.
- xi. How othir sindry Landdys lyis.
- xii. How Egipe and othir landdys lyis.
- xiii. How the land off Affryk lyis.
- xiiii. Howe the landys of Europe lyis.
- xv. How Brettanne and Irlande lyis.
- xvi. The fyrst chawngyng of the Twngis.
- xvii. The fyrst matere of Poesy.
- xviii. The fyrst matere of Mawmentry.
- xix. A Genology discendande.

## CHAP. I.

[The diuisionis of all this Buke  
In to this nixt Chepture ye luke.]

**I**N honowre of the Ordrys nyne  
Off haly Angelys, the quhilk dywyne  
Scrypture lowys, on lyk wys  
I wylle departe now this Tretis  
In Nyne Bukis, and noucht ma.

And the Fyrst Buke of tha  
Sall trete fra the begynnynng  
Off the Warlde, quhyll Nynus kyng  
Off Babylon and Assyry  
Tuk wpe the lordschype halily ;  
That wes in to Abrahammys dayis,  
As off that the story sayis.

10

The Secound Buke sall be fra than,  
Quhill Brutus come in Mare Bretan,  
The wys can the story telle,  
Quhen Jugis jugyd Israelle.

The Thryde sall contynwyde be,  
Quhille made of Rome wes the cité ;  
That wes quhen Achas Kyng  
Judam hade in goŵernynng,  
And the prophet Ysay  
Made and prechide hys Prophecy.

20



Fol. 2. b.      The Ferde, tyll the Incarnatyown,  
 That made oure Salvatyowne ;  
 And Octovyane wytht honoure  
 Off all the warlde was Emprioure.

                 The Fyft, quhyll the Scottis  
 Put out of Scotland the Pychtis ;  
 That wes in to gret Charlys dayis,  
 As off that the Corneklis sayis. 30

                 The Sext, quhill that Malcolme ras,  
 That weddyt wytht Saynt Margret was.

                 The Sewynd, quhyll Alysawndyre, oure Kyng  
 The thryde, of hys dayis made endyng.

                 The Auchtande, quhyle the tothir Robert  
 Oure Kyng wes crownyde efterwert.

                 The Nynde sall contynuyde be  
 In hym, and hys posteryte.

## CHAP. II.

[Off Angellis, now sall ghe heir  
 In this followand nixt Cheptere.]

SAYNT Gregor in ane Omely 40  
 Thus sayis of Angelys opynly ;  
 The kynde of angelys and of men  
 God made of nought hym for tyll ken ;  
 And for he walde that kynde sulde be  
 Ay lestand in eternyte,  
 Tyll hys schape and hys lyklynes,

Man and angell fourmyd wes.  
 Off angelys ordrys thrys thre,  
 In tyll hys wryt rehersys he.  
 The name of angelys for to dewys  
 Is noucht of kynd bot of offys ; 50  
 Ane messynger sulde ane angell be  
 Quhen chargyde oucht to say is he.  
 Angelis yhe may spyritis call,  
 Bot angelis ar noucht thare spyritis all.  
 Thre Angelis we fynd wsuall  
 Tyttlyde be namys spirytualle.  
 The fyrst cald is Mychaell,  
 Gabryell syne, and Raphaell.  
 Off Angelis nature and thare state  
 I trowe fer bettyr than I wate, 60  
 And bettyr is that we all comend  
 Tyll Gode that we can noucht defende,  
 Syn na thyng is that he na may  
 Than folylly we sulde oucht say,  
 That may noucht in ws consaywyde be,  
 Na prowyde be auctoryte,  
 For-thi fra this I turne my style,  
 Off Mankynde for to carpe. a quhyllle.

## CHAP. III.

[How God maid Adam and Eve his maik,  
 And how He for his syne tuk wraik.]

OFF Adam's oure orygynale,  
 And all oure kynde is cummyn hale, 70  
 That in the felde of Damask fayre,

Off nature and off nobyll ayre,  
 Or in the wale of Ebron,  
 As sum haldis opynyon,  
 Lyk made to Gode and schapyne wes  
 In Hys schape and Hys lyklynes,  
 And say fourmyde at dewys  
 Translatyde wes in Paradys ;  
 And thare lywand in that schape  
 Fol. 3. Slepand quhyll he tuk a nape, 80  
 Out of hys syde wes tane a ryb,  
 Thar of tyll [him] bathe lyke and sybe  
 That woman wes made that Eve we call,  
 For scho wes modyr of ws all.  
 Than thaire state wes innocent,  
 And all thyng bowyd tyll thair entent.  
 And name till bestis Adame gawe,  
 Swylk as yhit thai halde and haue ;  
 And Eve he cald thare a woman,  
 Syn scho wes of hys fles and bane. 90  
 Off matrimony the sacryment  
 Than rase in that state innocent,  
 And of all thyngis at thare plesance  
 Thai hade large abowndance ;  
 Quhill that thai bathe brokyn hade,  
 The byddyng that God thaim bade,  
 And myskend thare Creatoure.  
 Than fell thai swne fra gret honoure,  
 Kennand that thai nakid ware,  
 And of clethyng gret mystare ; 100  
 Thai wroucht nothir lynt na wowlle  
 Bot levys of the tre can powle,  
 Quhare-of array wes made that tyde,  
 Thair nakyde membrys for tyll hyde ;

And wes put out of Paradys,  
 A propyr place at all dewys,  
 Abowndande in all delyte,  
 Bathe of plesaunce, and profyte,  
 Off froyte, and foule, and feldis fayre,  
 Off arbuste, erbys, and of ayre, 110  
 Off buskis, bankkis, and of bewys,  
 Off clyftis, craggis, and of cluys ;  
 The tre of lyf thare-in is set,  
 Off that froyt quha mycht get  
 He sulde in lyf ay lestand be,  
 But seknes or mortalyte.

This terrestre Paradys  
 In to the est of Asy lyis :  
 Quhen Adam wes wythin that quhille  
 Put out of that stede in exile, 120  
 To kepe it than, and lat nane in,  
 Before it set wes Cherubyn  
 (That may be wndyrstandyn rycht  
 A stwff of angelis blyth and brycht),  
 And a swerd as fyre all rede  
 Wes set thare als to kepe that stede ;  
 Wythin that propyre place, but pere,  
 Thare is a welle of wattyre clere.  
 Out of that welle cummys fludis foure  
 Till moyst the erde quhar thai ryn oure ; 130  
 Ane of thir watterys is cald Ganges,  
 Syne Tyger, Nyle, and Ewfrates.  
 Nyle wes hattyn Gyon  
 As Ganges fyrst wes calde Phison.  
 In Paradys thai ar wnkend  
 Bot wyttht-out thai brek on ende,  
 At the hylle of Oskobares ;

In Ynde the hewyde is of Ganges  
 Agayne the est the streame is gane,  
 Swa rynnand in the Occeane, 140  
 Fol. 8. b. Be-syd ane hylle is cald Accland,  
 Off Nyle the ryware is spryngande;  
 Bot syne the erde it swellis in,  
 Quhar throucht all hyd it oysis to ryn  
 [It] brystys out syne at the strande  
 That by the Rede Se lyis strykande.  
 All Ethiop it rynnys a-bowt,  
 And throucht all Egypt rynnys out;  
 Departyde syne in fyffe and twa  
 Syndry partis rynnys swa, 150  
 By Alexawnder that cite  
 It entrys in the Mykyll Se.  
 Tyger syne, and Ewfrates,  
 Off Armeny thai tak thair res;  
 Agayne the sowtth thai ar rynnand  
 Swa to the Se thare streame strekand.  
 Hard wyth mankynde than it stude  
 Adam worthyde to wyne his fude  
 Off the Erde, that waryde wes,  
 In hys werk and his besynes, 160  
 And wytth his swat till ete hys brede,  
 Drywand hys lyf till dulefulle dede.

## CHAP. IV.

This Chapter sall phow tell  
How Cain hys Broder slew Abell.

ON Eve Adam gat sonnys twa,  
Kayin and Abell callid war tha;  
How that thai lywyde, and on quhat wys,  
To God thai made thair sacrifice,  
Abell wytht gude devotioun,  
Kayin wyth indignatioun,  
The Bybyll tellys it opynly,  
Thar-for I lat it nowe ga by : 170  
Bot the sawmpyll is rycht fellowne,  
Quha doys noucht wytht devotioun  
Hys det to God, in hys serwys,  
Offerand teynd or sacrifice,  
Bot makis hys excusatioun  
Wyth ire and indignatioun;  
Howe may he luk tyll other end  
Than Kayin dyde, bot gyve he mende,  
Will and wawerand to be ay  
In dowl and dwle till his end day 180  
Off quham that may hym fynde of case  
In hyddlys or in opyn plase,  
Cowardly to tak hys dede,  
Dispariede of all gud remede.

## CHAP. V.

**This Chapter makks descriptiōne  
Of Cayinis generatiōne.**

**T**HIS Kayin to sone Enok gat,  
 The quhilk gat Jaredē, efter that  
 Enoch a towne gert byggyt be,  
 And gart call Enoch that cite :  
 This Jaredē gat Mawlaliale,  
 The quhilk that gat Matussaele : 190  
 Matussaele he gat Lamech ;  
 Quha that likys of hym to spek,  
 He wes the fyrst fand bygamy,  
 Throucht lykyng lust and lychery ;  
 Tyll hym alane wes wywys twa,  
 That Ade wes callyde, and Sella.  
 Fol. 4. He wes the fyrste at schot in bowe,  
 Wyth vyre or bolt or wyth arowe.  
 Swa happnyd as he faylhyde lycht,  
 For eeld had myrknyd all hys sycht, 200  
 A chyld bade hym he sulde draw nere,  
 Quhar that, he sayde, he sawe a dere ;  
 Wyttht that the takyll wp he drewe,  
 And wyttht that schot he Kayin slewe,  
 That lurkand lay in tyll a buske ;  
 Than tyll that boy he gaue a ruske,  
 All brayne-wode in to that stede,  
 He dang hym wyttht hys bowe to dede.  
 This Lamech Jabel gat on Ade ;  
 He wes the fyrst at gart he made 210

Tentys to be borne a-bowte,  
As catell lesowyde in and oute,  
Quhar hyrdys mycht in herbry be,  
Nycht and day, to kepe thare fé.  
He gert dissewyr fyrst and kepe,  
As yhe se now, the gayt fra schepe.  
The brukyd bestys and the wayre  
He gert depart fra quhyt and fayre.  
The yhownge he partyde fra the awlde  
And oysyde thaim to bowcht and fawlde. 220  
Syne be craft and be delyte  
Off mylk and wole he gat profyte.

This Lamek gat on Ade wyth all  
Ane othyr sowne wes callyde Jubal.  
The story gerryys ws wndyrstande,  
He wes the fyrst at musyke fande  
Wyth hammerys clynkand on a stythy,  
Quhar men war wyrkand in a smythy.  
Jubal, quhen he herd Adam tel  
In prophecy, as efter felle, 230  
That fyre and flwde sulde all oure-ga  
And wndo that thai mycht oure-ta;  
Off swylk matyr as he hade  
He gert twa pillars sune be made :  
Off tylde or plastyr wes the tane  
The tothir wes made of marbyll stane,  
The tane to sawffe be fra the flwde,  
The tother fra fyre thocht it war wowde ;  
And in tha twa he gart full tyt,  
All the art of musyke wryte, 240  
Swa that it mycht haldyn be  
Wnfaylland in posteryte.  
Josephus sayis, in tyll his buke,



Qwha can well that story luke,  
That yhit in to [the] Surry lande  
The pyllare of marbyll is standand.

This Lameke gat yhit on Sella  
Twbalkayin and Noéma.  
Twbalkayin delytyt haile.

Be oysyde craft to wyrk mettalle. 250

Irne and stele, lede and tyn,  
To yhet, or bete, or grauwe thairin.

Hys systyr than cald Noéma  
Scho begowth on hand to ta  
Wewyng that nevyr than before  
Wes oysyd be cavale na reduore.

Off Kayniys generatiounne,  
Na off thar successyowne,  
Is na ma fyndyn in story,  
Thar-for I lat thaime now ga by.

260

Fol. 4. b.

Sum story sayis that Noeys flude  
Drownyd thaim that tyme that lywand stude.

## CHAP. VI.

*Off Sethis generatiounne here  
Next folowps in this Chapter.*

**A**DAM murnyd a hundyr yhere  
Abel hys swynnys slauchter dere,  
And quhen that slawchtyr wes foryhettyn  
On Eve Adam Seth has gettyn :  
Seth gat Enos that oysyde to call  
On Gode, in till hys dedys all,  
In prayer and in orysowne

And specyalle devotyown. 270

Enos gat, the buke can tell,

Caynan, that gat Malalyell ;

Malaliel he Jeryt gat,

The quhilk gat Enoch efter that.

This Enoch fand, as I herd tell,

Fyrst wyth lettyrys for tyll spell,

And syne he tuk in tyll delyte

To sett togyddyr faste and wryte.

In tyll hys tyme bukys he wrate

That drownyde ware in Noeys spate. 280

Tyll God he wes in all plesand

Tharfor he is yhit quyk lywand,

Bydand the Antecrystyes come

Befor the mykyll day of dome.

Off Enok come Matussale,

Off quham Lamek that gat Noe.

Nowe the fyrst Eeld endys here

In to the quhilk ar, yher be yhere,

Sexten hundyr sixty and sewyn,

Gyff that the Hebrewys rekknes ewyn 290

The ten and sixty Clerkes wys,

As thai fynd in thare storys

Twa thowsand and twa hundyre yhere,

And four and fourty passyd ar clere

Thai oysyd to cownt in thare reknyng

Than fra the warldys begynnyng

Gyff ony letterys than thai wrate

Thar oys wes than to set thaire date ;

As we now fra the byrtht of God

Reknys yherys ewyn or od, 300

Swa reknyd thai in thaire cowntyng

Than fra the Warldys begynnyng.

## CHAP. VII.

**This Chapitere tellis off Geawndis  
 fyrst grew and sprede in mony landys.**

**I**N TYLL this tyme at I off telle  
 Was Geawndys walkand fers and fell  
 That lyk tyll men ware in fygure,  
 Bot thai war largear of stature.  
 On quhat kyn wys and quhat manere  
 Thir ilk geawndis gottyn were,  
 Syn syndry haldys oppynyown,  
 I wyll mak na conclusyown. 310

Sethys swynnys, sum oysyde to say,  
 Luwyde Kayynys dowchtrys, stowt and gay,  
 And gat on thaim bodely  
 Thir geawndis that worthyde sa forssy ;  
 Or syndry spyrytys on thair wys

**Fol. 5.** Slepande women walde supprys  
 Wyth maystry, qweyntys, or wyth slycht,  
 That gat thir geawndis mykyll of mycht.  
 Bot howe that ever thai gottyn be  
 Geawndys name in propyrte, 320  
 Off the erde is halely  
 That Geos wyttnesys werraly.  
 The Grekys in thar langage all  
 Geos the Erde thai oysyd to call.  
 All thare sort that lywande stude  
 Drownyd war in Noeys flude.  
 Sum men haldys oppynnyown  
 That in the wale of Hebrown

Eftyr that grewe geawndis ma'  
 In Egypte sum men sayd alsua, 330  
 Geawndis grewe, and [of] that kynd  
 Come Enathym, and off hys strynd  
 Come Golyath, that Davy yhyng  
 Slewe wyth the stane cast of a slyng.  
 Thai past and spred fra land to land,  
 And Brwynt in Bretayne of thaim fand  
 Coryne that of hys cumpany  
 West mast, and aucht the seyhnowry :  
 Off Cornwalle fyrst had grete lykyng  
 To cast thai carlys in werslyng. 340  
 Among [thame] wes ane mykyll of mycht  
 Goemagog hys name wes rycht.  
 Ane ake wes na mare in hys hand  
 Than now in owrys ane hesylle wand ;  
 He wes twelf cubytys large of hycht,  
 Ane half elne is the cubyt rycht.  
 He come wyth geawyndys hale twenty,  
 On Brwtus and hys cumpany,  
 Bot yhit Coryne that tyme was  
 Noucht wytth Brwtus in that plas, 350  
 Bot Brwtus wytth thame faucht swa fast,  
 Quhyll thai war wencust at the last ;  
 Thar Goemagog wes tane  
 And haldyn quhyk be hym allane,  
 To se how that this Coryne  
 Walde dele wyth hym in to werslyng ;  
 And as thai met fyrst in thare gamyn  
 Ilkane brassyd othir samyn  
 Sa fast, that frek that Coryne thrystyd  
 Till in hys syde thre rybbys brystyde. 360  
 Coryne than wyth all hys mycht

Heyly hēwyde that hwlk on hycht,  
 And tyll a crag that wes neir by  
 He bare hym fast and spedily  
 That swayne he swakyde oure that hycht,  
 That on hys crown he gert hym lycht  
 Sa doggidly hym downe he dwyhsyde,  
 Till bak and bowalys all to brussyde.

Off Geawndis wyll I na mare telle,  
 Thare endyng thws in Bretayne fell.

370

## CHAP. VIII.

In this Chapitere rede and se  
 The Arke, and the Spate of Aze.

NOE was a man ryght wys,  
 Perfyt and lele at all dewys.  
 He fand fyrst throucht hys sutylye  
 How wyne sulde growe and wynnyn be.  
 Quhen mannys thoucht wes gywyn till ill  
 And drawyn all fra Goddys wyll,

Fol. 6. b. He wyst at thare walde fall a Flude

All tyll wndo that lywand stude.  
 To sawffe hym and hys swynnys thre,  
 Thair wywys foure, but ma menyhe,  
 He gert, of Goddis byddyng, mak  
 Ane ark in maner of ane stak,  
 That in owre tyme oysyde we  
 The schype to call it of Noe,  
 Thowcht on hycht it narowe wes  
 Wndyr rowme of mare larges.

380

The Hebrewys sayis the sewynten day

Off that moneth at we call May,  
 Sex hundyr yhere quhen he was awld,  
 Noe, that we off befor taulde, 390  
 And the seŵyn rekkynde ware,  
 In to that schyppe all entryd are.  
 Off byrde and best, bathe wylde and tame,  
 Payr be payr, and name be name,  
 As he byddyng had clerly,  
 In tyll that schype he gart herbry.  
 Ane hundyr dayis and fyfty gude  
 The wattiris wox as thai war woude  
 Off wellys waveryde waŵys wyde  
 Oure hyrne and hyrst, fra syd to syde, 400  
 Belyde boggys than out brystyd  
 And ranys rethe be-for that rystyde,  
 Fowrty dayis wytth forsyes fell  
 Schot out thare schowrys, scharp and snell,  
 Bath felde and fyrth oure-flet that flude  
 And wndyde all that it oure-yhoude.  
 That schype wes dryŵyn oure hyllis hie  
 Tyll on the hycht of Armeney  
 Grownd it tuk instede off haŵyn.  
 Than Noe fyrst send furth the raŵyn, 410  
 Till get wyttyng and knowlage  
 Gyf that the flude begowth to swage.  
 Bot that sendyng wes in ŵayne,  
 To schype that foule came noucht agayne ;  
 Bot fell on caryown all gredy,  
 Swa saw he no mare of corby.  
 The dow he send furth anys or twyis,  
 As wyttnessyde is in sere storys,  
 And that broucht in hyr beke belyŵe  
 A brawnche agayne of greyne olyŵe, 420

Be that thai kend and wndyrstude  
 In part that swaygyd wes the flude.  
 The schype has left and land has tane,  
 That ilk day a yhere oure gayne  
 That thai yhede that schype wytthin,  
 Man and best, bath mare and meyn.  
 The rayne-bowe wyth hewys twa,  
 Red and wattery bayt ar tha,  
 And at the fyrst wes seyne wyth ey ;  
 Owth thaim in the clowdyn hey.

430

Than Noe made hys sacrifice,  
 Plesand to God, as man rychtvys.  
 Froyt and gyrs thai oysyd tyll ete  
 As kers, or mawe, or wyolete,  
 Nwt, or appyl, or akhorne ;  
 Swylk wes the lyf thai led beforne.  
 Than thai tuk wpe to thaire fwde  
 For tyll ete fleyhs forowtyn blude ;

Fol. 6.

Rostyt, sodyn, or in paste,  
 As thaim thocht best and daynte mast,  
 And lyve in lykyn and in es,  
 Allanyrly bot Gode to ples,  
 At swa thaire generatyown  
 Mycht sprede in tyll successyown.

440

It hapnyde eftyr on a day  
 This Noe drownkyn slepand lay,  
 For off the wyne he wonyd hade,  
 He drank swa fast that he wes glede,  
 And nakyde wes hys harnays hare,  
 Bak and buttoke bath wes bare.  
 I suppos, quha than walde seke  
 Amang thaim all wes noucht a breke.  
 Than Cam, that wes the myddyll brothyr,

450

Saw fyrst hym before all othir ;  
 He lewch rycht fast and wald noucht hyde  
 Hys fadrys membrys for tyll hyde,  
 Bot grynnyd and gapyde wytht hys gwmys,  
 And skornyd fast his fadyr lumys.  
 The tothir twa, quhen thai come by  
 And sawe thare fadyr swa-gat ly,  
 Wytht eys and honowre thai hym kepid,  
 And cwveryde hym quhille he had slepid.

460

Quhen that Noe gat wyttyng  
 That Came had drywyn hym tyll heythyng,  
 He gaue hys maledictiowne  
 Till Camys generatyowne ;  
 And Sem hys [eldast] swn sulde be  
 Lorde of Canaan, and he  
 Tyll Sem and Japhet in threllage  
 Sulde serve, and mak thaim bath omage.

470

In [this] prys begowth to payre  
 Syn Kam wes eldest nest the ayre  
 That he suld serve the yhowyngyr brothir,  
 Howe evyr it happnyd off the othire.

Fol. 6.

## CHAP. IX.

*This Chapter now sall tell hale  
 The four Pryncis principale.*

**S**EM, Cam, and Japhet, thre,  
 Thir ware the swynnys of Noe.  
 Off thir come men of mekyll mycht,  
 Tyll statys growande and tyll hycht,  
 And generaly of all kyn gre



All kynd of men come of thir thre. 480

Off Sem that wes the eldest brothir

Presthed come befor all othir.

Sum that oysyde of hym to spek

Sayde he wes that Melchysedek.

That offryde tyll Abraham wyne and brede

Quhen the kyngys foure war dede

The quhilkyz Abraham swa perswyde

Hys brothir swn quhill reskwyde.

Quha lukys the Bybille inerely

Off this may fynd a fayr story. 490

Off Semys generatyown,

Be lyneale successyown,

Wes Jhesu Cryst of Mary borne

Tyll sawffe oure lyff that wes forlorne.

Off Came the nixt, for hys owtrage,

Fol. 6. b. Come serwytywde and foule threllage.

Off Japhet the yhongast of tha thre

Fyrst come knychtys dignite.

Thir awcht the landys halyly

Off Affryk, Ewrope, and Asy, 500

And the foure Kynrykys pryncypalle

Be thare successyowne lynealle

Wes occupyid; and Belus kyng

Made in the Est hys fyrst steryng.

And that than was halily

The kynryk callyde off Assyry,

And in the west art syne anone,

The kynryk ras of Sycyone.

Bot eftyr that to name it hade,

In Grece the lordschype of Archade. 510

Thare Agelyus fyrst wes kyng

Had it hale in goŵernyng.

In the north art of Sythy  
 Caspnyus had the senyhoury.  
 Myneus kyng in the south art,  
 Tuk all Egipte till hys part.  
 In thir foure partis severale  
 Thir Kynrykys pryncipale  
 Wndyr thir four kyngys ras  
 Qwhen Noeyis flud all swagide was ;  
 And grew in gret mycht mony yhere,  
 Part of thaim syne chawngide were  
 In othir kynrykis severale,  
 As thai begowth off cas to fale.

520

## CHAP. X.

*This Chapter tellis how Paradise,  
 Inde, and othir landis lyis.*

**T**YLL Sem, as eldast, halily  
 Fell all the landis of Asy,  
 That fra the northt throucht est out-strekys  
 In tyll the sowth quhyll that it rekys :  
 The Erd swa delt in twa partys  
 Asy the tane half occupyis ;  
 The tothir part than delt in twa,  
 Ewrope haldys and Affryca ;  
 As men may be a roundale se  
 Markyd to be delt in thre.  
 In to the [est of] Asy lyis  
 That propyr plas of Paradys,  
 The quhilk is cerklyd wytht-out  
 Wytht wallys of fyre beltyde abowt,

530

And kepyde swa wytht Cherubyn  
That lyvand man may nane get in. 540

[Cherubin is to saye, ane ost  
Of Angellis that it kepis, but bost.]  
Be-twene Ynde and Paradys  
Desert landys mony lyis,  
Wytht holmys, holtys, and wyth hyllys,  
Till corne or crope that na man teyllys ;  
For bestys wylde, batht fers and felle,  
Is nane of lywe that thar dar duelle.

F. 7.

Out of ane hylle cald Caucasus  
The wattyr is rynnande of Indus, 550  
[And eftir that watter, as we fynd,  
The kynrik is callit of Ynd].

Fra north on sowth the streme it strekys  
In tyll the Rede Se quhille it rekys.  
Yndys Ooceane, that Se  
The west marche of Ynde sulde be.

Fyrst it was calde Eivlat,  
And syne the name of Ynde it gat,  
For the wattyre of Yndus  
Rynnys throucht it fra Cawcasus, 560  
[And enteris in the Ooceane.]

The gret Ile lyis of Taperbane  
Wytht-in that Ile ar citeis ten  
Stuffyt wytht catelle, gud, and men.  
Thar twa summyrys in the yhere  
And twa wyntrys ar, but were,  
And all tyme that Ile is sene  
Wytht gyrs growand ewynlyk grene.

Thar lyis als wythin that se,  
The ilys of Kryn and Argwe ; 570  
Thai twa ilys, as thai say,

Off silvyr ar habowndand ay,  
And of gold in gret copy,  
And flwryssys alway dayntely.  
Hylls hé off golde ar thare,  
Bot gryphys gret nerhande thaim ar,  
And dragownys ; quharfor na man may  
Cum nere thaim thar be nycht or day.  
In Ynde als thai sulde be  
The ile of Caspis in the Se, 580  
And the hylle that lyis it by  
That ilke name has propyrlly.  
Thar Gog and Magog, at felown wes,  
Closyt ar in gret straytnes.  
Quhen Alysawndyr, the mychty kyng,  
By that plas mad hys passyng  
Wytht hys ost, as man off were,  
Thai closyde than maid hym prayere,  
That for hys wurschype thai mycht be,  
Owt of that presown lowsyd fre. 590  
Than he speryd and herd wele telle  
That fra thare God of Israel  
Thai chawngyd fawsly thare fay,  
And closyd tharfor thar war thai ;  
He prewyde wytht werk-men than thraly  
Thare in to steke thaim mare straitly.  
And quhen he saw all that thai wroucht  
Till hys intent yhit suffycyde it noucht,  
He mad tyll God hys wrysowne,  
One kneys wytht gud devotyounne, 600  
That that werk he walde fulfyll  
Till hys lykynyng and hys wylle.  
At hys prayere than, but dowl,  
All the hillys thar a-bowt,

The caggys, and the rockys all,  
 F. 7. b. Crape to-gyddre in ane walle  
 Befor thaim, that be na way  
 Wyne out of that place mycht thai,  
 Bot mare stratly thai war thare  
 Than closyde na befor thai ware ;  
 And be that myrakyll lyk it was  
 That God walde noucht at thai sulde pas  
 Out off that closure, bot yhit thai  
 Sall get out befor Domysdaye,  
 And mekyll way in warld sall wyrk  
 Agayne the lawe of Haly kyrke.

610

Syne God of mycht inclynyd was  
 Thus tyll a pagane, of hys gras,  
 Quhat walde he for ws all set,  
 Gyff we tyll hym walde do oure det ;  
 Bot fra hys wyll quhen that we wryth,  
 Quhy sulde he hys gracys kyth,  
 Till ws, in oure necessyte,  
 Oure in til bale owre bute sulde be,  
 Na ware hys mercy gret exced  
 Owre gylt and all oure wrangwys dede ;  
 And swa, for oure gret wrechydnes,  
 We mon declyne hys rychtwysnes,  
 And on his mekyll mercy call  
 In oure defawt quhen that we fall.  
 For mercy and rychtwys jugement  
 Ar in hym bath, but argument.  
 For-thi, we sulde have dowt and awe  
 To leve hys byddyng and hys lawe,  
 And yheld ws fekyll fals in fay,  
 Wrythand in tyl werk alway,  
 For dowt that or we ws repent

620

630

We mon appere in jugement,  
 And to cry mercy, is toe late  
 The wayne, than standand at the yhat. 640

In Ynde are landys fourty and fowre  
 Quha that sekys it all at-oure ;  
 And thar ar folk that callyde was  
 Garnyanys and Orastas,  
 Cotras thar woddys fayr,  
 Rekys on hycht wp tyll the ayre ;  
 In tyll the hyllis of that land  
 The pigmaveis ar duelland  
 That has bot cubytys twa of hycht.  
 And oft wyll wyttht the crannys fycht. 650

Quhen thai ar thre yhere awlde, but let,  
 Thair barnys all thai bere and get ;  
 And aucht yhere thai ma noucht weylde,  
 Thair wapnys for febyll heylde ;  
 Thare pepyre growys that off hewe  
 Is qwhyth quhill it is growand newe.  
 Bot for eddrys that ar thare,  
 Off wenyne and stangys sare,  
 Thar is na man that may it wyne  
 Wyth a fyre quhill thai it bryne, 660

Swa wyttht that rek thai oys to make  
 Owt off qwhyth hew this pepyr blak.  
 Thare ar folk sex elne of hycht,  
 Makrobitys thai ar callyde ryght ;

Fol. 8. Thai oysis oft for tyll assayhle  
 The gryphys in fycht and hard batyhle.  
 To lyownys lyk ar thare body,  
 And naylys scharpe haŵys certainly ;  
 And weyngys als thai haŵe, but were,  
 As yhe se ernys haŵand here. 670

Agroit thare and Bragmanyis  
 Leddys thare lyff on ferly wys ;  
 For in a fyre thai wyll thaim bryn,  
 Thynkand a bettyr lyff to wyn.  
 Thar sum wyll thare eldrys sla,  
 Quhen eelde thaim hapnys tyl our-ta,  
 And sethys the fleys, and gerryys the kyn  
 Gaddryde be, bath mare and myn,  
 And ettys syne halily.  
 A the fleys of that body, 680  
 And quha that forsakys till et  
 Off that fleys, he sall, but let,  
 Be forsakyn off kyne  
 Newyr to [be] reknyde in.  
 Othyr folk thare oysis tyll et  
 All rawe fysch that thai ma get,  
 And drynkys bot wattyr off the se,  
 Quhethyr it salt or byttyr be.  
 Thare ar monstryys mony sere,  
 Off the quhilk are nane sene here, 690  
 That nane can wyt in propyrte  
 Quhethyr thai man or best sulde be.  
 Sum owth thair fete thare solys hawys,  
 And on ilke fut aucht tayis ;  
 And sum wytth-in thai landys thare  
 Lyk off hewyd tyll hwindys are,  
 Wyth naylys scharpe, and thai ar cled  
 In bestys skynnys, bak and bed,  
 Thaire wocys, quhen thai ar spekand,  
 Ar lyk tyll doggys ay berkand : 700  
 Sum mudrys in that land alsua  
 Berys bot anys, and all tha  
 Borne thai ar qwhyte of canys,

Bathe of heȳyd and berde at anys ;  
 Ande in thare eelde agayne thare hare  
 Worthys blak in all tyme thare ;  
 And of eelde yhit mony yhere  
 Excedys ws that lyȳys here :  
 Thare sum berys of yherys fyȳe,  
 And passys noucht aucht yhere of lyve. 710  
 Thar ar folk callyde Armaspy,  
 And havys bot ane ey certainly :  
 Thar sum folk bot a fute has,  
 And yhit for sped the dere our-tays ;  
 And quhen thai ly on erde to slepe,  
 Fra swne and weddyr thaim to kepe,  
 Than that a fwt wpe thai streke  
 That it fra thaim the weddyr brek.

Wytht-in Ynde in tyll sum stede  
 Thare lyȳys a folk wytht-owtyn hede, 720  
 And in the fawt of thare foret,

Fol. 8. b. Twa eyne ar in thare schuldrys set ;  
 And in thare brestys ar holys twa,  
 In-stede of nes and mouth ar tha.

Besyde the wattyr of Gangis,  
 A pupyll thai say lyȳwand is  
 But othir met than of ayre :  
 Savorand off ane appyll fayre,  
 And fele thai ony stynk wytht-out  
 Thai dé tharof, wytht-owtyn dout ; 730  
 And quhen thai trawaill owcht in fere  
 Thai wyll wyth thame that appyll bere  
 To be thare mete in thare trawaylle,  
 In fawt of fude at thai noucht fayle.  
 Thare serpentys ar sa gret, but were,  
 At thai wyll suelly wpe a dere,



And wyll swym all oure that sé  
 That Yndys Occeane callid we.  
 In to that land thare is alsua  
 A best thai call Cenocrata ; 740  
 That best is lyk of body made  
 Tyll ane as, bot he is brade  
 Off brest before, and in fassown  
 Off lym is lyk tyl a lyown,  
 Tyll ane hors lyk ar his fet,  
 And has ane horne in his foret,  
 Hys mowyth of kynd is rywyn wyde  
 Fra ere tyll ere on ilk syde ;  
 A gret bane, thai say, has he,  
 In that stede quhar hys teth sulde be, 750  
 And oysis mekyll in hys bere  
 Syk woycys as a man dois here.

In to that land thare sulde be  
 Ane othir best callide Gale,  
 That is lyk all tyll ane hors,  
 In tyll the fassown of ane cors,  
 And has a gret tusk as a bare,  
 And taylyd as elephawntys are ;  
 And in hys hewyde has hornys twa,  
 Ane half elne lang, ilkane of tha ; 760  
 And fyrst he oysis wytth the tane  
 Tyl hald wp fychtyng and bargane ;  
 The tothir on hys bak he strekys  
 Qwhille he that blwntys, or he brekys,  
 And syne it castys on his bak,  
 Than wyll he wyth the tothir mak  
 Hys bargane furth, and wyth tha twa  
 Hys fycht he oysis for till ma :  
 He is a best of mekyll pytht,

And wgly blak he is thare wytth. 770

In that land thare is alsua  
A best thai call Manticora,  
Off wysage thai say lyk is he  
Till a man in all degre,  
Bot the teth that ar wytth-in  
Hys hewde ar set in chestyr thryn;  
Off cors he lyk is a lyown,

F. 9. Hys taylle is lyk a scorpyown;  
Hys eyne ar yholowe, and [of] hewe  
Is blwde rede, and elyke ay newe; 780

Off woyce he lyk is and of bere  
As yhe here eddrys quhysstyl here;  
And off spede he is mare lycht  
Than ony foule is apon flycht.  
He oysys mekyll for tyll ete  
All mannys fleys that he may get.

Thare owsyn ar wytth hornys thre  
Wytth fete as here on hors yhe se.  
Ane othir best thare is wytth all  
That Monoceros [forsuythe] thai call, 790

He is in fassown of hys cors  
Lyk in all thyng till ane hors;  
Bot swylk ane hewde thai say has he  
As apon ane hert yhe se;  
As elephawntys bath fete and tays,  
And as a swyne a tayle he hawys;  
Wytth a horne, and that is set  
Ewyne in the myddys of his foret,  
Armyt thare wytth [he is] als wele  
As men are in to yrne or stele; 800  
Off leynth foure fwte hale is that horne,  
And it is wondyr scharpe beforne;

Thai bestys wondyr fellown ar,  
 And oysis wyth gret rerde to rare,  
 And wytth that horne he wyrkys payne  
 Till all that standys hym agayne.  
 He may be tane and slane wyth slycht,  
 Bot nevyr dawntyde be at rycht.

In to the wattyre of Gangys  
 Thai say that mony elys is 810  
 That ar thretty fwt of leynt ;  
 And wormys als of hwge streynth,  
 Lyk to partany her ar thai,  
 And on thare cors has armys twai,  
 And sex elne are hale of leynt.  
 The elephawntys thai tak wytth streynth,  
 And oft gerry's thame drownyd be  
 In wattyris depe, or in the sé.

In to the Yndys Se, thai say,  
 Snaylys gret ar fundyn ay, 820  
 And men thare makys of thare schelle  
 Luyngys gret for tyll in duelle.  
 Thare adamant, thai say, is gude  
 That nevyr ma brek but bukkys blwde.  
 In Ynd ar othir ferlyis sere,  
 That I lewe for to rekyn here,  
 For tha ar, tyll yhowre knowlage,  
 Translatyde welle in oure langage.

## CHAP. XI.

In this Chaptere on what wys  
 The sal se that sere Tandis liis.

FRA Ynd to Tygyre, by wattyr's twa,  
 Lyis a land calde Parthia : 830  
 In it ar cuntreis thryis tene  
 And thre attoure stuffyt wytht men,  
 Off men that come of Sythya,  
 F. 9. b. That lande was callyt Parthia.  
 Nest that land wes calde Parthy  
 The land lyis of Aracusy.  
 Off Aracus, ane hyll of hycht,  
 That land that name has gottyn rycht.  
 Nest it lyis halily  
 The lordschype gret off Assyry : 840  
 Off Semys swn that Assur was  
 Callyde that land that name now has.  
 Nest lyis the landys of Medy,  
 Off Medus kyng cald rychtwysly.  
 Syne lyis the lordschype hale of Pers ;  
 Quhare Perseus kyng, I herde rehers,  
 Gert fyrst a cyté byggyde be,  
 And syne that lordschype Pers calde he.  
 Off wërtu thar ar stanys twa,  
 Pyr and Siles calde ar tha : 850  
 Pir is of wërtu for to bryn  
 The hand that it is closyd in ;  
 Syles waxis wytht the Mowne  
 And wany's agayne as dois the Lune.

In Pers wes fyrst nygromancy,  
 And wyche-craft, wytth sorcery ;  
 Throuch Cam fwndyn that syn was  
 Be name callid Zorastas,  
 Kyng off Baktryanys, that Nynus slwe,  
 To state of lordschype quhen he drewe. 860

Wytth hyllys hey thir landys ar,  
 And craggys strayt, her and thare,  
 Bot profytabyll to man and best,  
 Ewyn as a lyne fra est to west,  
 Betwene the gret rywarys twa,  
 Ynd and Tygyr calde ar tha.  
 Fra Tygyr syne till Eufrates,  
 Mesopotamya fwndyt wes,  
 For it wes set betwene tha twa,  
 It hat Mesopotamya : 870

Thar lyis the towne of Nynyve,  
 That Nynus kyng gert byggt be,  
 Quha throwcht it passis the nerrast ways  
 Off leynt he fyndys thre jowrnays.  
 Thar nest lyis that regyown  
 The kynrik calde off Babylowyn,  
 Quhar that a Towre of huge hycht  
 Wes byggt fyrst throwcht Nembrot wycht ;  
 That towre Babell callyde he.  
 Thare lyis the land off Caldé, 880  
 Quhar fyrst wes fwndyn astronomy.

Nest lyis the land off Araby,  
 And that, that we Saba call :  
 In it the cens is gottyn all.  
 Thar is the mownt of Synay,  
 The hill of Oreb ner thar-by.  
 Moyses thare the Lawe wrate,

Quhare wytth was rewlyt the Jowys state.  
 Thare lyis the towne off Madyane,

F. 10. Quhar Getro, prest, wes fyrst owrman ; 890

Thar ar als thir Moabytys,  
 Idumeys, and Ammonylys,  
 And Saracenys of natyowyns sere,  
 That ma noucht all be rekynd here.

Fra the wattyr off Ewfrates  
 The land off Surry lyis, but les,  
 Furtht strekand to the Grekes Se  
 Thar lyis off Damask the cyté.

Thar lyis als Antychia

That qwhylyon wes calde Reblata, 900

Commagene, and syne Phenys,  
 Thar Tyre and Sydon alsua lyis ;  
 Thar is that hill thai call Lybane,  
 And off it cummys the flwm Jordane ;

Thare is the town callyd Palestyn,

That Ascalon wes callyd syne ;

Thar is the kynryk of Jude,

And all the land off Canane,

Jherusalem and Samary ;

All thir ar lyand in Surry, 910

And all the land of Galyle,

Wyth Nazareth, that fayre cyté ;

Quhar Gabriell, that Angell lycht,

Sayd to [the] madyn, fayr and brycht,

HAYLE, FULL OF GRACE ! AND GOD WYTH THE !

IN ALL WOMEN THOWE BLYSSYD BE.

By standys a hill is calde Tabor,

Ner that wes Sodom and Gomor,

And cyteis ma that brynt for syn

And fylth of thaim that duelt thare in : 920

Thare now is bot a Dede Se,  
 Wytth-owt ony commodyte;  
 And in that Se, for-owtyn dowt,  
 The watterys, that cummys rynnand owt  
 Off the flwme Jordane, tays entre  
 Qwhat wyis sa ever thai rynnand be.  
 Thar ar mony Saracenys,  
 Ysmalytys, and Agarenys,  
 And [thai] that ware cald Rabateys,  
 And dywers othir in thare greys,  
 Off Natyownys and off ceteys sere,  
 That I leve now to rekny here.

930

Thir landys that thus reknyd ware  
 Fra the est ewyn lyand are,  
 All strekyd to the Grekys Se,  
 Land be land in to thair degre;  
 And twelf sere Natyownys on thair wys  
 Oysand thair lawys, and thair frawnchys.

## CHAP. XII.

*Next schall þe wyrt on qwhat kyn wiis  
 Egipte and sere Tandis liis.*

Fol. 10. b.

**A**GAYNE the sowttht to thir ar knyht  
 All Egyt hale, as sayis the wryt.  
 Be est it lyis the Rede Se.  
 The west marche sulde in Lyby be,  
 Be north the hill of Cawcasus:  
 Egipt lyis all marchyde thus,  
 Wytth syndry Natyownys twenty and foure  
 Quha passys Egipt all at-owre,

940

And mony a symly cyté fayre,  
Wytth towre, and stepe, and hewyn stayre.  
Fyrst it callyd was Ewrya,  
Off Latyne, Bona Copia, 950  
Gud Plenté, that is to say ;  
The brodyre syne off Schyr Danay,  
Egystus kyng, off ryell fame,  
Gert that land Egipt have till name.  
In it is all kyn habowndans  
That gaynand is tyll mannys substans,  
Off wyne, off wax, off oyle, and qwhete ;  
Off byrde, and best, batht small and gret,  
Off fysch in flwde, and froyte off tre,  
Thare is habowndance and plente ; 960  
Sa clere and lycht thare is the day  
That na kyn clowde puttys lycht a-waye ;  
Thare ryvarys ragys noucht for rayne  
Na moŵys noucht wytth mycht na mayne,  
Off nakyn stormys at may fall ;  
The wattyr off Nyle owre-fletys it all  
Wytth moŵyr spryng, fore-owtyn spate,  
Quhen Egypte nedys to be wate.  
The land off Tebys in it lyis,  
And off it lord was Saynt Morys, 970  
Bot Gadmws, the swne off Agenor,  
Made a cyté thare beffor.  
Nest Tebys lyis wyldyrnes  
Quhar mony mownkys quhylwm wes.  
Thar Cambyses, a kyng of mycht,  
That Egypt wane throucht fors off fycht,  
Made in Egypt a cyté,  
And Babylon it callyd he.  
Syn Alysawndyr the conqweroure



Made Alysawndyr, off gret honowre. 980

Be northt thir landys reknyd thus  
Standys the hill off Cawcasus,  
On est half fra the Caspys Se  
Swa rysand in tyll summyte  
Northt on tyll Ewrope merchande nere,  
Quhare Amazonys duelland were.  
Thai war wemen wyld and wycht,  
And oysyd all armyt for tyll fycht,  
And in all pres war sterne and stowt,  
To fycht wyttht men thai had na dowl. 990

F. 11.

Wyttht thame wes Natyownys duelland sere  
That spedys noucht to be reknyd here  
Off Kolcos, and off Sarvy,  
Massagetys, and othir ma.  
In to that est thar is ane hyll  
Seres that name [is] gewyn tyll,  
Syne swa wes callyd that cuntré,  
Off clathys off silk thare is plente.  
The land off Babeta lysis thare by,  
And till it marchys Hyrkany ; 1000  
Thare fowlys ar swa fayre and brycht,  
Thare feddrys ar schynand all the nycht.

Nest marchand lysis Sythia,  
Till it a land cald Hunya,  
Wyttht Natyownys syndry fourty and foure,  
Quha sekys all thai landys oure.  
Thare ar alsua hillys hey  
That cald ar Yperborey.  
Syne is a land cald Albany,  
That qwhyth betakynnys propirly ; 1010  
For the folk duelland thare in  
Ar qwhyth of hare, battht cheke and chyn.

Nest lyis the land off Armeny,  
 Wytht Ararat, that hill sa hey,  
 Quhare Noeys schype on grownde stwde,  
 Quhen all swagyt wes the flwde.

Nest lyis a land cald Ybery,  
 Wytht it marchys Capadocy ;  
 Wytht out stalown the merys thar  
 Off the wynde consayvand are. 1020

Bot thai hors or yherys thre  
 Hapnys noucht to lyvand be ;  
 For this is ferly for to here,  
 A clerk that tretys off this matere  
 Sayis, thare is in to that land  
 A wattyre gret, on hewyd rynnand  
 Depe and reche, bot noucht full wyde,  
 Wytht bankys hey on evryilk syd ;  
 On the ta syde off that flwde,

The stede hors gayis in pastur gude ; 1030  
 On the tothir half, day and nycht,  
 The merys ar wyth in thare sycht,  
 Bot it ma fall be na kyn way  
 That togyddyr met ma thai ;

Swa waycht and wod than ar thai hors  
 That as be-huŵys apon fors,  
 Fra tha capylis sudanly  
 The kynd ethchapys habowndanly  
 That swa stark is off flaŵeoure  
 That [it] raykys the revar our ; 1040

And in thai merys entre tais,  
 That baggyd gret wytht foyle thaim mais,  
 And castyn syne ar qwyk gangand  
 Bot thai fayhle to be lang lestand.

F. 11. b.      Syn Lytyll Asy lyis, but dowl,

Nere beltyde wytht the Se abowt.  
 Thare Epheson the fayre cyté  
 Amazonys gert byggyt be.  
 Now men oysis it to calle  
 Hawtelog in landys all.  
 Saynt Jhon the ewangelyst thare lyis,  
 That plesyd tyll God in hys serwys.  
 The fyrst land of Les Asia  
 Is calde the Mare Frygya.  
 Fyrst Beryke and syne Mygdony,  
 Bytynya, and syne the Mar Frygy.

1050

Thare is a cyté off gret fame  
 That Nycea has to name,  
 In it a Seyhne solempne wes sene,  
 Thre hundyre byschapys and awchtene ;  
 Before Sylvestere the haly Pape,  
 Revestyde weylle in albe and cape,  
 Thai exponyt [than] clerly  
 The trewtht that Crystynmen lywys by.

1060

There is a cyté calde Smyrna,  
 And nest it lyis Galachia.  
 Syne lyis the landys off Turkey,  
 That fyrst wes callyd the Les Frygy ;  
 Schyr Dardanus gert eftyr call  
 Dardanya that lordschype all ;  
 Syne Troyws kyng, off gret powste,  
 Gert reale Troye byggyt be,  
 Abowt ane hyll wytht in the town  
 Ylyon calde, off gret renown.  
 Nest tha landys lyis by  
 Lykaon and Hykary :  
 Thare rynnys a ryvare calde Hermes,  
 That famows is off gret ryches.

1070

For in the sande besyd that flwde  
 Off fyne golde thare is plente gude. 1080  
 Nest lyis the landys off Lydys hale,  
 Tyatyra, be down and dale,  
 That is off Lydys a cyté,  
 And chymys off that lande sulde be.  
 Nest it lyis Ysawrya,  
 Off wynde or ayre it cald is swa,  
 For hale and pwre thare is the ayre,  
 It hat Ysawrya sa fayre.

Nest it lyis Sylycya,  
 Thare is ane hill calde Amana, 1090  
 That sum oysis to call Tawrus.  
 Nest lyis a cyte calde Tarsus ;  
 Thare Paule the Apostyle prechyde  
 Tyll Crystyne trewth, quhen he men techyd.  
 Nest lyis a land cald Lycya,  
 Syne Sydy, and Pamphylia ;  
 Syne Polys, that large regyown,  
 Wytth mony a syndry Natyowne  
 Lywand wpone syndry wyis,  
 F. 12. Wytth thaire lawys, and thaire frawnychys. 1100  
 Thare Ovyde, and Saynt Clement syne,  
 Ware exylyde to be dede in pyne.

Now haŵe yhe herde me lychtly  
 Ourehale the landys off Asy,  
 That tulle Sem and hys lynage  
 Grewe, and fell in herytage,  
 And it the half is off the thre  
 That partys off the Erde sulde be.  
 Fra the sowth it bakwarde strekys  
 In tyll the northt qwhill that it rekys 1110  
 The northt art, as I fynde in wryte

On [the] rycht half is the west off it,  
 The left halff levys at Affrica,  
 And the west at Ewropa,  
 And is beltyde nere abowt  
 Off thre sydys wyth the Se wytht-owt.

## CHAP. XIII.

In this next Chapter folowande  
 Is tauld how Affrike is lyande.

OFF Abrahammys posteryte  
 Affer, thai say, sulde cummyn be.  
 He wes a man off reale fame,  
 Off hym all Affryk has the name, 1120  
 That thryde part off the Erde sulde be  
 Quhen all the lawe is delt in thre,  
 And as the land off Affryk lyis,  
 The sowth art hale it occupyis.  
 The wattyre [of] Ynde, as sayis the wryt,  
 On est half is the marche off it.  
 And at the west off it sulde be  
 The strayt off Marrok in the Se,  
 And the cyté off Gades,  
 The pyllarys off Ercules, 1130  
 Wytht-in ane yle, in to the Se,  
 Wes set, and may wel knawin be.  
 Gades nowe, that cyté fyne,  
 Is calde the Sept in Balmaryne.  
 A gret land is cald Lyby  
 Lyis in tyll Affryk halyly.  
 Pentapolys nest is syne,

For fywe cyteis thar are fyne.  
Trypyll syne off cyteis thre  
Nest hande that sulde lyand be ; 1140  
And syne the kynryke off Cartage  
That Dydo awcht off herytage :  
The wallys of it in brede abowt  
Off awchtene cubytys ware bwt dowl.

Syne the land off Getwly,  
Nest it is lyand Nwmydy,  
Wytht Yppon that cyté fyne,  
Off it wes byschape Saynt Awstwyne.

F. 12. b.

Nest lylis a land calde Mawrytane,  
Nest Cesare, and syne Syngytane : 1150

Towart the sowth is lyand syne  
Ethyope ; in it a cyté fyne  
Off Saba, and off that cyté  
Wes that Qweyne that come to se  
Salamon in to hys dayis,  
As the Buk off Kyngys sayis.

Ethiope lylis in to the est.  
The tothir Ethyope in to the west ;  
Thar is a welle off wattyre clere,  
Bot thare is nane dar necht it nere, 1160

All the nycht it is sa hat,  
Syne turnys it in ane othire state,  
And sa cawlde is on the day  
That man na best it drynk na may  
Off Ethyope ; and by it nere,  
Throwcht sped off fwte, men tayis the dere.

Trogedytys thai oys to call  
That folk in thare langage all.  
By-yhonde all Ethiope, but les,  
Lylis mekyll land in wyldernes, 1170

Quhar na man dare repayre na duelle  
 For het off swn, and eddrys felle ;  
 As [in] a caldrown thar, thai say,  
 For het of sown the Se wyll play.

Now haue I tawld yhowe schortly  
 The landys off Affryk as thai lay,  
 That tyll Cam and his lynage  
 Grewe and fell in herytage.  
 Tyll Ewrope now I turne my styll,  
 And thare off wyll I spek a qwhille.

1180

## CHAP. XIV.

*This next Chapter is folowande  
 Shall tell how Europe is lhande.*

**T**HE landys that in Ewrope lyis  
 The north art all occupyis.  
 In to the north off Ewrope is  
 A ryver that hat Tanays,  
 Quhare that thar standys hillys he  
 That hat the mowyntys [of] Ryphey,  
 Fra the wattyre off Tanayis  
 Sowth on to Danoy strekyd is  
 A land cald Nedyre Sythya,  
 Ovyr Sythy lyis in Asya,  
 And tyll it [is] marchand nere  
 Set thai ly in partys sere,  
 For-thi sum haldys that bath tha  
 Sulde be bot a Sythya.  
 In it is lyand halyly  
 Lectow land and Albany,

1190

Get-land and Dacya,  
Thir lyis in the Nedyre Sythia.

Fra [the] wattyre off Danoy  
Tyll Alpes, that ar hyllys hey 1200

Departand Ytaly fra Frawns,  
Be marchis, merys, and distawns,  
Lyis Duche-land all halyly,

F. 13. That cald wes Owyr Germany.

Germany in propyrte

Burjownyng may callyde be ;

For thare men in gret multitude

Sa growys off fowrme and fasown gud ;

Quhare-for men oyside propyrly

That land to call all Germany. 1210

Almayne men oysyd it to calle,

SwaWyne in it is lyand alle,

West on wytth the wattyre off Ryne ;

On north half it is rynnand syne

A wattyre that is callyd Alvews.

In Almane spryngys Danwbyus,

That we oys to call Danoy,

Wytth wattrys ekyd hale sixty ;

Bot it is rynnand to and fra

Deviddit in partys fyff and twa ; 1220

At Powns it entrys in the se

Off Asy ; that is ane cowntre.

In Almayne is BaWayr and Respoyne,

Est-Frank, Twryng, and Saxoyne :

Syne Nedyre Germany on-ane

Strekys north in the oceane :

In that Nethir Germany.

All Northway lyis halily,

And sum men sayis Denmark alsua,



And sum men sayis in Sythia. 1230  
 Fra Danoy that gret ryvere  
 And all abowt it lyis nere  
 A land that calde is Messya ;  
 For plenté gret, men callis it swa,  
 Off corne that thare is habowndand ;  
 It lyis est on ay strekand,  
 Marchyd wyth the Mekyll Se.  
 Off Boemy, the gret cuntré,  
 It marchys nere wyth Pannony,  
 That lyis nere wpon Wngary. 1240  
 Syne lyis a land callyd Tracya,  
 Tyras it awcht, and cald it swa ;  
 In it rynnys that ryver  
 That calde in awlde tyme wes Hyvere ;  
 In it alsua is that cyté  
 That Constantynopylle now calle we.  
 The lande off Setym halyly,  
 That Grece is cald now comownly,  
 Fra the Mere Medytterrane  
 Lyis sowth on to the oceane 1250  
 That is in the Mekyll Se wyth-out,  
 Beltand all the erde abowt ;  
 Swa all the Erde may wele be  
 Calde ane Ile wytht-in the Se.  
 In Grece lyis Dalmatia,  
 Epyr, and Kapuya,  
 Melos land, and Ellady,  
 Attyke, Athenys, and Boecy.  
 Cadmus the swn off Agenor,  
 That Tebyk in Asy made before, 1260  
 That Boecy gert byggyt be,  
 And Tebys in Grece it callyd he.

F. 13 b.

The men off Tebys in Asy  
 Ar calde in Latyne Tebey.  
 Tebany thai oys to call  
 In to Grece the Tebys all.  
 In Grece is Pelops and Tessaly,  
 And the land off Macedony,  
 Olympws als, the hill off hycht  
 That passys the clowdys ewyn wp rycht 1270  
 Tessalonyke, and Akay,  
 Coryntws syne, and Arkady  
 That calde beforne wes Sycyon,  
 A stane is thare calde Albeston  
 That may off na wys slokyd be  
 Fra anys in fyre men may it se.  
 Syne lyis Ovyr Pannony,  
 Tyll Appennyne the hillis hey,  
 On north half rynnys that ryvere  
 That cald quhylum wes Hystere, 1280  
 Now men oysis for to call,  
 Danoy that ryver all.

Men oysyt to call Ytaly.  
 Mekyll Grece all halyly;  
 It rysis at the Alpis he  
 And haldys on to the Mekyll Se;  
 It namys chawngyd has syndry  
 Bot yhit it cald is Ytaly.  
 Thare Romwlus gert Rome be made,  
 That fassown of a lyown hade; 1290  
 In takyn at it sulde soverane be  
 Off all landys; as yhe se  
 The lyown havand seyhnwry  
 Off all bestys hym lyvand by;  
 For in tyll awlde tyme men that made

Cyteis ay in custwme hade  
 All lyk to bestys thaim to ma ;  
 And this Rome wes ane off tha  
 That wes made in tyll fassown,  
 As I sayd, lyk tyll a lyown. 1300  
 Brwndys lyk ane hart wes made,  
 And Cartage als the fassoſwn hade  
 Off ane ox, and Troy wes  
 Made as ane hors in lyklynes.  
 Thir townys all the fassown had  
 Off thir bestys, and wes made  
 Lyk tyll thame in all kyn gre,  
 As the makarys had daynte  
 Off thai bestys and delyt  
 Be fret, or oys, or be profyt. 1310

Nere Ytaly lyis Tuskayne ;  
 Syne lyis a land is calde Chawmpayne,  
 And the lande off Poyhle thare by,  
 Syne all the landys off Lumbardy,  
 Wytth mony fayre and gret cyteis  
 Abowndand all in tyll rycheys.

At tha Alpys thai say syne  
 The hevyde is off the wattyr off Ryne.  
 Fra thine thai [say] swlde lyand be  
 Sowth on strekand to the Se 1320

The kynryk off Frawns tyll Occeane,  
 A se betwene it and Bretane,  
 Be west it Lyowns apon Rone,  
 Be sowth it lyand is Narbone,

F. 14. Wytth Arle thare-in, a fayre cyté,  
 And nere that thai [say] sulde be,  
 In to the west all Eqwytane,  
 That we oys nowe to call Gyan :

That land thai say is lyande fayre  
 Ner strekand by the wattyr off Layre. 1330  
 Syne lyand is the land off Spayne ;  
 A se betwene it and Bretayne  
 Departys bathe thai landys thare,  
 As severaly thai lyand are.

## CHAP. XV.

How bathe Bretayne and Erlande  
 With Europe is liggande.

BLESSYDE Bretayne beelde sulde be  
 Off all the Ilys in the Se,  
 Quhare flowrys are fele on feldys fayre,  
 Hale off hewe, haylsum off ayre.  
 Off all corne thare is copy gret,  
 Pese, and atys, bere, and qwhet : 1340  
 Bath froyt on tre, and fysche in flwde ;  
 And tyll all catale pasture gwde.  
 Solynus [sayis], in Bretanny  
 Sum steddys growys sa habowndanly  
 Off gyrs, that sum tym, bot thair fe  
 Fra fwth off mete refrenyht be,  
 Thair fwde sall turne thame to peryle,  
 To rot, or bryst, or dey sum quhyle.  
 Thare wylde in wode has welth at wylle ;  
 Thare hyrdys hydys holme and hille ; 1350  
 Thare bewys bowys all for hyrtht,  
 Bathe merle and maweys mellys off myrtht ;  
 Thare huntyng is at allkyne dere,  
 And richt gud hawlkyn on rywere ;

Off fysche thaire is habowndance  
And nedfulle thyng to mannys substance.

On Est half it lyis Germany,  
And all Denmark halyly ;  
And West half Bretane is lyand  
All hale the landys off Irland.

1360

Fyffe wrakys syndry has oure-tayne  
Off [Goddis] lykyng this Bretayne ;  
Quhen Peychtys warrayd it stoutly,  
And wan off it a gret party ;  
Syne the Romanys trybute gate  
Off Bretayne ; and syne eftyr that  
The Saxonys off Ingland hale  
Wan it, and hade the governale ;  
Syne thai off Denmark warrayd fast,  
Bot yhit thai tynt it at the last ;  
The Normawndys eftyr wan Ingland,  
And thare ar lordys yhit ryngnand.

1370

Off Langagis in Bretayne sere  
I fynd that sum tym fyff thare were :  
Off Brettys fyrst, and Inglis syne,  
Peycht, and Scot, and syne Latyne.  
Bot, off [the] Peychtys, is ferly,  
That ar wndone sa halyly,  
That nowthir remanande ar langage,  
Na [yit] successyown off lynage ;  
Swa off thare antyqwyt  
Is lyk bot fabyll for to be.

F. 14. b.

1380

Be west Bretane is lyand  
All the landys off Irland:  
That is ane land off nobyl ayre,  
Off fyrth, and felde, and flowrys fayre :  
Thare nakyn best off wenyym may

Lywe or lest atoure a day ;  
 As ask, or eddyre, tade, or pade,  
 Suppos that thai be thiddyр hadе. 1390

Be northt Brettane sulde lyand be  
 The Owt Ylys in the Se.  
 Off thame ar thre pryncipale,  
 Suppos thare be ma in the hale :  
 Orknay certis ane sulde be ;  
 The Isle off Man syne in the Se,  
 Betwene Irland and Bretany ;  
 Is Wycht anens Normawndy.  
 Yhit thretty ylys in that Se,  
 Wyttht-owt thir, ma welle reknyde be. 1400  
 And in that Se thare is an Ile,  
 That in tyll awlde tyme cald wes Tyle  
 Thare sex moneth off the yhere,  
 That we halde for summyre here,  
 Thare for-owtyn nycht is day ;  
 The sex moneth off wyntyre ay  
 Wyttht-in that yle is ythand nycht,  
 Wyttht-owtyn ony dayis lycht.  
 Be north tha may nane erde be  
 Fwndyn, bot a mekyll Se. 1410

All thir landys, as thai ly  
 I have ourhalyd lychtly.  
 Quhat I have mysdone in my spelle  
*Ymago Mundi* kane wele telle.

Bot all Ewrope in herytage  
 Tyll Japhet fell, and hys lynage :  
 He wes the yhoungast off the thre  
 Swnnys gottyn throwch Noe ;  
 The eldest swanne off this Japhet  
 Wes Gomere, that gat Rygaet : 1420

This Rygaet eftyre that  
 Gat Ysrawe, that Ysrawe gat :  
 Syne this Ysrawe gat Jara,  
 That fadyre wes syne off Ara :  
 Off this Ara come Doyt :  
 And his swne calde wes Artoyt :  
 Off Abywr syne eftyr that  
 Come Otoyrr, that Mayr gat :  
 Off hym come Reyne, that gat Boe,  
 The quhilk wes fadyr tyll Toe : 1430  
 Agnoym wes syne fadyr  
 Tyll ane [swn] wes calde Etoyr :  
 Off Etoyr come eftyre that  
 Lamyne, that Cogyne-Glymyne gat :  
 Syne Fynyas-Farset in that qwyll  
 Gat a swn, wes calde Nevyle :  
 This ilke Nevylle eftyre that  
 To swn Gedyll-Glays gat,  
 That hade weddyt Scota yhyng,  
 Pharaoy's dowchtyr of Egypt kyng. 1440

F. 15.

## CHAP. XVI.

In this next Chapitere ghe sall here  
 How fyrst the Tongis changide were.

**C**AM, the myddyl off the thre  
 Swynnys gottyne off Noe,  
 Had a swn callyde Cws,  
 That gat Nembrot, and he Belus.  
 This Nembrot stalwart wes of pytht  
 And wayth man he wes thare wyth ;

He wes the fyrst that yharnyde tyll have  
 Seyhnowry oure all the lawe  
 That lywand wes in lande hym by.  
 Off hys cownsale halyly 1450  
 Babelle, that towre, biggyd was,  
 That off hycht hade foure thowsand pas,  
 In to the felde off Sennaare,  
 Qubare that mony gadryde ware  
 On set purpos to wyn thaim name  
 And hey thaire prys, thaire state, thaire fame,  
 Thai thought a cyté for to ma,  
 A Toure wythin off hycht alsua,  
 To clym wpe to the ayre quhen thai  
 Swylk maysterys lykyd till assay. 1460  
 This purpos thai put in tyll deyde,  
 And wes wyrkand wytth gud speyd ;  
 Swa it happnyd, at the last,  
 As thai wroucht and travelyde fast,  
 Thare speke chawngyd sudanly,  
 And ilkane spak swa syndyrly  
 That nane cowth othyr wndyrstande,  
 As he wes on hym than blabrande.  
 Comestor sayis in this chawngyng  
 God made na wrocht, na wnkouth thyng, 1470  
 Tha ilke woycys sykyrly.  
 Thai had before all generaly  
 Remaynyde styll wytth-owtyn lesyng,  
 Suppos thai woycis [made] chawngyng  
 A worde is newe in fourmys sere  
 Ma than I kan reknyn here ;  
 Qwhare before wes oysid nane  
 Bot Hebrew langage, it allane.  
 Thai cessyde than off thare byggyng.



For thai mycht bryng tyll nane endyng      1480  
 Thare purpos, na thare fyrst intent,  
 Thai had sa fers impedymment,  
 Qwhare-off ilkane hade ferly  
 Thai spak to-gyddyre sa wnkowthly,  
 That nane ane othir wndyrstude,  
 All wyll off wane fra thine thai yhwde,  
 Dyvvsyde in to landys sere;  
 All thus the langagys chawngyt were.

## CHAP. XVII.

*The fyrst matere off Poesy  
 That is bot feyheine propirly.*

F. 15. b.

**A**WTORYS sere, in thare storys,  
 Oppynnnyownys haldys on syndry wys      1490  
 Off this Nembrot, the swn off Cus;  
 Frere Martyne cald hym Saturnus,  
 Pullux swn, sum sayd, he wes,  
 Sum feyhneyd he wes fadyrles,  
 And nane sowerane our hym hade,  
 And all the warlde off golde he made.  
 The poetys calde hym Creatowre  
 Off all that thai dyde tyll honowre,  
 As Pluto, Jupyter, and Bachus,  
 Neptwne, Mars, and Eolus,      1500  
 Off batylle, wyne, wynd, and se,  
 Thai feyhne that thir sulde goddys be;  
 Yhit thir poetys feyhnyes mare  
 Off this Saturne we spake off are  
 That fra he wyst be werde that he

Throwcht hys swn sulde geldyt be  
He bad hys wyffe rycht straytly  
Quhat byrth scho bare off hyr body  
Béfor hym scho sulde it set,  
For that, he sayde, sulde be hys met, 1510  
Swa on hys barnys he sulde be wrokyn,  
That that werde sulde all be brokyn.  
Than Pluto fyrst hyr happnyt to bere,  
And off hym, quhen scho wes lychtere,  
Scho gert send hym hys fadyr to,  
To se off hym quhat he walde do.  
Than Satwrne dawé hym in yerde,  
Swa fayhlyd in tyll hym the werde;  
Thar-for hym god off erde or helle  
Poetys callys in thare spelle. 1520  
Off Neptwne nest scho wes lychtare  
And scho hym tyll hys fadyre bare,  
And he hym swaykyde in the se,  
Thar-off thai feyhne that god is he.  
Fra scho herde this felny dwne.  
Tyll Pluto fyrst, and syne Neptwne,  
Scho let tyll hym be browcht no mare  
The barnys that scho eftyre bare.  
Syne to swn he gat Pycus,  
That fadyr wes to Fernyus, 1530  
And hys swne wes calde Latyne.  
Off Ytaly he lord wes syne,  
And this Latyne langage he  
In tyll fowrme gert spokyn be.  
The ferde swn scho happynde to bere  
Wes calde be name Jupyter;  
This Jupyter all prevaly  
Scho gert be fostryde tendirly,

- Quhill he passid all yhowthade,  
 And storknyde in tyll stowt manhade. 1540  
 Agayne hys fadyre irowsly  
 F. 16. Than he ras in swylk felny,  
 And made on hym swa fellown chas,  
 Folowand hym fra place to place,  
 Quhill Satwrne, for sawfte,  
 Flede in that ile was callyde Crete;  
 Thiddyr hys swn folowyde fast,  
 And tuk hym thare in at the last,  
 And presonyde hym lang tyme in pyne,  
 And tyte fra hym hys lumys syne. 1550  
 Thare thai kest thame in the se,  
 Wenus thare off sulde cummyn be.  
 Thir poetys sayis in thare fenyhyng  
 (Bot it is noucht all suthfast thyng)  
 Men may trowe full werraly,  
 And mystrow this all wtraly,  
 For in the articlys off the Crede  
 Is noucht off this for-owtyn dred.  
 Thai halde alsua this Venus wes  
 Off luve lady and goddes, 1560  
 Off all fayrhede; and for-thi  
 All thai that luwyd perdrwry  
 Made tyll hyr thare sacrificyis,  
 And honowryd hyr in thare serwys.  
 Propyrly, as scho sulde be  
 Thare hope, thare hape, and thare awowe.  
 Thare-ef tyre fra that Saturnus,  
 As yhe haue herde was geldyt thus,  
 He buskyd off that land to ga,  
 That Jupyter suld noucht hym sla, 1570  
 Na wyrk hym mare wa na dispyte,

He gat in tyll a gala tyte,  
 And passyd the se sa happely  
 That he gat in tyll Ytaly.  
 Thare, as he closyd hys latyrday,  
 Poetys off hym noucht mare walde say,  
 Bot that he wes howth vs sete  
 To be rygnand a planete,  
 Hys cours haldande be hym-selwe.  
 In ilkane off the taknys twelve, 1580  
 Sex moneth and twa yhere.  
 Fra he entyre in the syngnyfere,  
 Quhill thretty wyntyr be oure-tane  
 Or he be qwytyl all throwch gane.  
 The Zodiake that we call;  
 For that he berys the taknys all,  
 In hys cours wytht wyolence  
 Offt hapnys were or pestilence;  
 Swa is mankynde in gret dowte  
 Quhyll he hys cours haue all made owte, 1590  
 Wndir this Saturne, as Ovyde sayis,  
 That made the warld in tyll his dayis.  
 Off Gold, all state was innocent,  
 But plede, or ony jugement.  
 He gert nothyr erde na tre,  
 In hys tyme dolwyn na hewyn be,  
 F. 16. b. Thair byrth, but thret, thai oysid bere,  
 Thaire wes na wylde that wyst off were,  
 Then wes na schype to sayle the Se,  
 Nowthir craere, farkost, na galé; 1600  
 Thare wes na cuntre mare plesande  
 Tyll man, that tyme, than hys awne lande;  
 Best and byrd, and fysch in fiwde,  
 Had at thaire chos all lykand fwde,

The lady that tyme, Dame Nature,  
Wytth hyr rewle lede all creature.

Quhen this Saturne away wes dede,

Hys swyn that ras in tyll hys stede,

Saw this golde off kynd sa brycht

All dysessfull tyll hys syght;

1610

Wp that gold he tuke away;

And he the warlde made, in hys day,

Off qwhyte Sylwyre, that wes were

Metalle than the golde beffere.

He gert bestys wndir yhoke

Thole brodys sare, and mony a knoke;

He gert fyrst men mak byggyng

And oys in hows thare dwellyng;

Hors he gert bath drwg and drawe,

And men he kend tyll ere and sawe;

1620

Goshawke he dawntyde and fawcownys

To tak bathe boytoure and herrownys.

Quhen Jupyter syne wes dede,

He that succedyt in hys stede,

The golde and sylvyr he gert be hyde,

As yhit is wndyr the kyst lyd,

And all the warlde he made off Bras,

That were than gold or sylver was,

That wes all state of mare downes,

Than ony tyme before it wes.

1630

The werst generatyowne

The ferde was in successyowne,

Quhen that prynce hys powere hade,

Off Yrne all the warlde he made.

Owyde sayis in to that quhyle

Wpe ras falshede, swyk and gyle,

Slycht, mycht, and ill qweyntys,

And brynnand lust off cowatyis.  
 The gest yharnyed wele to fare,  
 Mycht nowcht be sykkyre off his hoslare ; 1640  
 Na the maʼich couth noucht be  
 In pes wyttht hys alyé ;  
 And oftsys the ta brodyre  
 Walde off were be wyttht the tothire ;  
 The fadyre trowyt that the swyn  
 Walde, for hys land, hys dayis war dwne.

## CHAP. XVIII.

The fyrst matere off Statmentry  
 That Clerkis callis Idolatry.

F. 17.

**A** MAN in awlde tyme wes calde Belus,  
 Fadyr he wes to Schyr Nynus,  
 That wes kyng off Assyry.  
 Hys fadyr he luwyde sa tendirly, 1650  
 That quhen he wes dede before,  
 For tyll have off hym gud memore,  
 All lyk hys fadyr in fygoure  
 Ane ymage he mayd in fayr payntoure,  
 That payntyd ymage wyttht colowrys fyne  
 In publyk place he set wp syne,  
 Quhare comowne acces and repayre  
 Men mycht have tyll that figoure fayre,  
 And gert oure all [his] lordschype cry,  
 Quha to that ymage devoutly 1660  
 Walde cum, for gyrrh or sawifte,  
 Na man suld swa hardy be  
 Hym to pres to tak or slay,

Or ony mannans tyll hym may,  
 For ony mys that he had dwne,  
 Bot thare thai sulde have succoure swne,  
 Qwhyll thai wyttht-in the presence ware  
 Byddande off that fygowre thare.  
 Than, for caus off swylk succoure,  
 The men off that land dyd honoure 1670  
 To that fygoure, as that it ware  
 A god off mycht and off poware,  
 Othire be that ensawmpylle syne  
 Off novyll matere or off fyne,  
 Off thare frendys that ware dede.  
 Set wp syk fygure in thaire stede,  
 And gert do thame sik honowre,  
 As thai had bene thaire creatoure :  
 Sum Bell thai callyd, and sum Baall,  
 Sum Beelzebub, sum Belyalle. 1680  
 Thus fyrst begouth Ydolatry,  
 That we oys to call Mawmentry.

## CHAP. XIX.

*Off a Genealogi till here  
 Next folowis in this Chapiter.*

**Y**HYT sulde I telle a Genealogy  
 Fra Sem descendand lynealy,  
 Gyve I sulde my mater bryng  
 And my purpos tyll endyng.  
 In tyll the tyme I spak off thus,  
 Semmys swyn Pedagys  
 Gat a swyn, wes cald Gwalé,

That syne wes fadyr tyll Adre ; 1690

The quhylk gat Stermonyus,

That fadyr wes off Ermodius ;

Thare eftyre hys swanne Scealffy.

That fadyre wes off Scealdy,

Hys swne borne gat Tettius,

That fadyr wes syne tyll Gettius ;

F. 17. b.

Godduffus eftyre gat Fynny,

That was the fadyre off Frealfy ;

Fredwalde eftyre, gat Woden ;

He fadyr wes off mony men.

1700

Bot Semmys fyrst swn Arphaxat

Gat Caynan, that Ebere gat.

This Caynan wes calde Sale,

Jerusalem fyrst fwndyt he,

And off hym come thai halyly

That Ynde fyrst awcht, and Samary.

Ebere eftyre gat Phalek,

In hys tyme men begouth to speke

In tyll mony twngys sere,

As effyre that thai chawngyd were,

1710

Off Ebrewe the langage that tyme left

Tyll Phalekys lynage lange thare-est.

In hys tyme begouth mawmentry

That we oys to call ydolatry.

Phalek the fadire wes off Rewe,

Sum oysyde to call hym Ragewe,

In the tyme that this Rewe was

Off Sythy fyrst the kynryke ras.

This Rewe to swn Sarwke gat,

Off hym come Natore, eftyre that

1720

In this Sarwkkys tyme on-one

Off Assyry and Sycyone



The kynrykis ras in ryawte.  
 Off this Nator come Tare.  
 Babylon in tyll hys dayis  
 Wes byggyd, as the story sayis.  
 Off this Tare efftyre that  
 Come Abraham that Isaac gat.

Here the Secownde Elde tayis ende,  
 As the Hebrwyis mayis ws kende,  
 Contenys in it yhere be yhere,  
 A thowsand and twa hwndyr clere,  
 And twa and twenty yhere, but mare.  
 Bot to this discordand are  
 The Seŵynty wys interpretowrys,  
 For, as we fynde in thare Scriptowrys,  
 A thowsand sevynty yhere and sewyn,  
 The Secownd Elde contenys ewyn.

1730

[Explicit Liber Primus.]

**THE SECUND BUKE**  
**OF THE**  
**ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL**  
**OF SCOTLAND.**

.



THE SECUND BUKE  
OF THE  
ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL  
OF SCOTLAND.

---

*The Proloug off the Secund Buk  
In this Chapitere now yhe luke.*

**N**OW have yhe herde on quhatkyn wyis  
I have contenyt this Tretys,  
Fra fyrst fourmyt wes Adam,  
Tyll this tyme nowe off Abraham,  
And bathe the Eldys has tane ende,  
As in all storys welle is kende,  
Contenand hale the three thowsand yhere  
Nyne scowre and foure oure passyt clere:  
The quhilkys as Orosius  
In tyll hys Cronyklys tellys ws,  
Ner foryhet ware raklesly,  
Or than myskende all wtraly  
Wytth thayme, that set hale thair delyte  
Before than storys for to wryte.  
Fra Abraham ande Nynus Kynge  
All storys tays thaire begynnyng;  
As Pompeus, and Justyne,  
Orosius says, and Frere Martyne.

Nowe tharefore in to certane terme  
This Tretys furtht I wyll afferme, 20  
Haldande tyme be tyme the date,  
As Orosius qwhylum wrate ;  
And off hys Storys tha wyll I  
Compyle, that me-thynk mast lykly  
Tyll oure Matere accordande,  
And tyll yhowre heryng mast plesand,  
Tyll the time, that efftyre felle,  
Quhen Jugis jwgyde Israelle.  
Bot wytht Orosyus we wyll discorde  
In tyll oure date, qwhen we recorde  
Before or fra the byrth off Gode, 30  
Reknand yherys ewyn, or ode :  
Beffor or fra than reknys he  
The yhere, as made wes the Cyté.

**The Chapteris off the Secund Buke.**

- i. **O**FF Nynus kyng, and his slawchtyr.
- ii. Off Abrahamys dayis.
- iii. Off Ysaakys progenye.
- iiii. Qwhen fyrst byggyde wes Rodis.
- v. Off Josephis forsycht.
- vi. Off Dewcalyonys Flude.
- vii. Off the wrakis off Egype.
- viii. Off the Scottis Orygynale.
- ix. Off the Yrsche Orygynale.
- x. Off ane othir Geneologe.
- xi. Off Danaus and Egistus.
- xii. Off Josue and hys days.
- xiii. Off the Cretes and Atenyens.
- xiiii. Off the Amynowtaure.
- xv. Off Wersozes Kyng off Egypt.
- xvi. Off the Wemen Amazones.
- xvii. Off the Assege off Troye.

## CHAP. I.

This Chapitere tellis how Nynus kyng  
Had Babilone in governynge.

A.C. 2052. **B**EFOR that Jhesu Cryst wes borne,

To sawffe oure lyff that wes forlorne,

Twa thowsand hale and fyfty yhere,

And twa yhere owre, to rekyn clere,

F. 18. b. Nynus kyng off Assyry,

In lust off lordschype, and fellownly,

Tuk wpe armys to warray

Sere landys that abowt hym lay.

All Asy, throwche hys cruelte,

Wytht were and batayle dawntyde he.

10

Fyfty yhere hys lyff he lede,

And mekyll off sakles blwde he schedede;

All the landys off Sythy,

And othir natyownys thare syndry,

That oysyde to lyff, bot sympyll lyff,

Wytht-owtyn batall, were, or stryff,

And lathe wes bargane for to moŵe,

Or in tyll were thaire pythys proŵe.

Syk lyff he kend thame for to lede,

That blude off men in slawchtyre dede,

20

Thai oyside to drynk mar comownaly

Than mylk off scheype, or gayt, or ky.

Tyll wyncust he thaim kend sa fast,

That he wes wencust at the last.

Cam that calde wes Zorastes,

And kyng off Baktryanys qwhylum wes,  
 The fyndare off nycromancy,  
 Off wyhecrafft and sorcery ;  
 Fyrst he supprysyt wyttht hys mycht,  
 And slewe hym syne wyth fors in fycht. 30  
 It happnyd eftyre on a day,  
 As he abowte a cyté lay,  
 In tyll assege as man off were,  
 Assayleyheande it wyttht hys powere  
 Sik assawtys thare he made,  
 That nere the towne he wonnyne hade ;  
 Ane archare in a kyrnale stude,  
 That wele behelde quhare Nynus yhude,  
 Hawand in hys hand a bowe,  
 Thare in he set a brade arowe, 40  
 That to the hwkis wpe he drwe,  
 And wyttht that schot he Nynus slwe.

Than Semyramys, his wyff,  
 That led in lykyng al hyr lyff,  
 In tyll hyr chawmbyr than syttand,  
 Hyr hayre in wympyll arayand,  
 Quhen that scho herd off this cas,  
 Suppos in hart scho sary wes,  
 The tane half off hyr hare wnplet,  
 Scho gert plat on hyr hys basynet, 50  
 Wyttht othire armys gud and fyne,  
 And lape apon a cursere syne,  
 And to the towne, but mare abade  
 Arayit wyttht hyr ost scho rade,  
 And gert thame mak thare wpe assawte,  
 Wythowtyn falyhyng or defawte,  
 Qwhyll that scho wonyn hade the towne,  
 And broucht it to confusyown.



Fra thine hyr lust stwde halyly  
 In slawchtyr and in lychory. 60  
 Fowrty yhere scho lyvyt and twa,  
 And wandyt na mare for to sla  
 Hym that scho gert ly hyr by  
 Than hym that wes hyr inymy,  
 Quhat tyme that hyr lykyng stude,  
 And yharnyng had for to se blude.  
 Off chawmbyr play scho was nevyre sade,  
 For all the copy that scho hade ;  
 Scho gert oure all hyr landys cry,  
 Be statute ordanyt fermly, 70  
 That all that walde in lykyng lyve,  
 And tyll lust thare bodyis gyve,  
 Thai sulde in all be als fre  
 As it mycht lykand to thame be.  
 Tyll sybredyn haffand na knowlage  
 And, but all reverence off maryage,  
 In all apport scho proŵyt man,  
 Suppos in fourme scho wes woman.  
 All Ethyope scho wane, but dowl,  
 And made it tyll [hir] wyndyrlowt ; 80  
 Scho passyd in Ynd in playne bataylle,  
 Qwhere hyr before nane durst assaylle,  
 Na eftyr hyr wyttht fors off fycht  
 Bot Alexandyr, that wyth hys mycht  
 Wane Mede and Pers, and Ynde allawa,  
 And all the lave off Asya.  
 Bot Ynde in tyll hyr tyme wes were  
 To wyn, than eftyr hyre beferre,  
 For off nakyn wer wyth-owte  
 Na wyttht-in thai had na dowte 90  
 Off inŵy, na cōwatys,

Na falshede that thaim mycht supprys.  
 Set scho lyvyt in terandry,  
 In governance scho wes happy,  
 And avysy wes off were,  
 And kowth weylle sé for hyr mystyre.

Hyr landys lyand hyr abowte  
 Scho stwffyt weylle wytht-owtyn dowl,  
 And gert thame weyll replenysyt be  
 Wytht hors, and noyt, and othir fe.  
 Off wyne and wax, oyle and qwheyt,  
 And all tyme scho had copy greyt.  
 Off froyte that grew on erd and tre  
 Scho had in all tyme gret plente,  
 Scho gert men thraly set thaire cure,  
 Corne to wyne wytht thare culture.

100

F. 19. b.

Off Babylone, bathe towre and towne,  
 Scho made gude reformatyoune,  
 And kyrnalyt it perfytyl,  
 And baytaylyd it rycht propyrlly,  
 And drewe in tyll it marchandys,  
 Bowcht and sawlde on syndry wys,  
 And helde in tyll it crafftys sere,  
 At may nowcht all be reknyt here.  
 Amang all othir comownaly  
 Scho lete hyr awne swne ly hyr by;  
 Swa anys as scho come hym tyll  
 Hyr fleschly lust for to fulfyll,  
 Prevaly he gat a knyffe,  
 Wytht that fra hyr he refft the lyff.

110

120

All thus qwhen scho endyt was,  
 Hyr swne succedyt, Nynyas,  
 The swne and ayre to Nynus Kyng,  
 And had that lande in governyng.

And efftyre hym off lynyage  
 Succedyt to that herytage  
 Fourteyne ayrys syndrely,  
 Be lyne descendand evynly,  
 Beffor that lordschype was wndone,  
 As yhe may here efftyre sone. 130

This Nynus had a sone alsua  
 Sere Dardane, lord de Frygya,  
 Fra quhom Barbere sutely  
 Has made a propyr genealogy  
 Tyll Robert oure Secownd kyng,  
 That Scotland had in governyng.  
 The paganyis made in thaire storys,  
 That is bot fabyll or fantys,  
 That Jupyter gat on Electra,  
 Sere Dardane lorde off Fregya : 140  
 To tell yhowe thaire-off the story  
 Walde do as nowe bot occupy  
 Tyme, and walde forthir noucht  
 Purpos that sulde tyll ende be browcht.

## CHAP. II.

Off Abrahame now schall ghe here  
 Parte wryttine in this Chapitre.

A.C. 2010.

**T**WA thowsand yhere and ten beforne  
 That Cryst wes off the Madyn borne,  
 Quhen that fourty yhere and ane  
 Fra Nynus ras ware fully gane,  
 That ane folowand the nest yhere,  
 Abraham, off quhom yhe sall nowe here, 150

P. 20.

Wes borne, and than ane wes he  
 Off the sonnys gottyn off Tare.  
 He lewyt all tym wertusly,  
 And God hym blyssyd specyally,  
 In tyll hys tym he fand of newe  
 To wryt lettyrys off Hebrewe,  
 (For the bokis that Enok wrate  
 Drownyt all in Noeys spate).  
 He kend the Caldeys perfytly,  
 The scyens off astronomy, 160  
 He geŵe fyrst, in tyll hys dayis  
 Teyndis, as the Bybyll sayis,  
 To Melchisedek, that than hade  
 The soŵerayne ordyre off Presthade,  
 That offeryt tyll Abraham brede and wyne,  
 That blyssyt hym, and devotly syne,  
 Quhen that he come hame agayne,  
 Fra that the kyngis foure ware slayne,  
 Quhare that Loth rescwyd he,  
 Wyttht all hys gude, and hys menyhe, 170  
 He kende the Egyptis wysly,  
 The scyens off geometry,  
 The Circumcysiowne fyrst tuke he  
 And, as we fynde, the Jubilé  
 Fyrst in hys tym fundyn was,  
 And nowe we call the yherys off grace.  
 A sone he gat on Saray,  
 That Ysaak was calde werraly.  
 Ane hundreth yhere quhen he wes aulde,  
 And sevynty, to the gast he yhalde, 180  
 Quhen all hys tyme fulfillyde wes,  
 In gud eyld and in rychtwysnes.

## CHAP. III.

*This Chapitre tellis clerli  
Off Esakis progeni.*

Y SAAK weddyt Rebecca,  
And on hyr he gat sonnys twa,  
Esaw callyde the eldest,  
And luwyt wes wyttht the fadyre best;  
Jacob callyde wes the tothire,  
Off byrth he wes the yhungest brothire;  
At anys the modyr, nevyrtheles,  
Off thame twa delyvere wes. 190  
In huntynge Esawe had delyte,  
Jacob set hym for profyte  
Off corne, catelle, or off fe,  
Quhare-wyttht he mycht sustenyt be.  
Fra huntynge Esawe all wery  
Come on a day, and ryght hungry,  
And off the potage walde haue hade  
That Jacob tyll hys dynare made,  
For hym thowcht it ane harde thrawe.  
Hwngyr than in tyll hale mawe, 200  
That Jacob warnyde hym wtraly,  
Bot gyff he saulde hym halely,  
All hys awantage and hys gre,  
That for as eldest hys sulde be.  
Than Esaw, for-owtyn lete,  
For hungyr that he wes in sete,  
For a dysfulle off potage,  
Gaue wpe alle hale hys herytage.

Thus Jacob wane the eldest gre,  
Thowcht yhungar in the byrthe was he. 210  
Syne how this Jacob sleely

Prewenyde hys brodyre qweyntlye,  
Quhen throwcht hys modyre suggestyowne,  
He wan his fadyr benysowne ;  
How syne off thir brethire twa,  
Jowys and Gentyle come alsua,  
Than Gentyle was all generaly,  
That come noucht discendand lynealy

Fra Jacob be successiowne,  
Na off hys generatyown. 220

Jowys fra thine wes in that gre  
That Cristynmen now in yhe se.  
This Jacob was callyd Israelle,  
Fra wytth hym wyrstlylde the Angelle,  
As in the Bybyll wryttyn is,  
In to that Buk callyde Genesis.

This Jacob on hys wyffis twa,  
Rachell callyde and Lya,  
Gat sonnys twelf, and Judas  
Ane off thai twelff sonnys was. 230

Thir twelff, that I yhowe off telle,  
The Tribus are off Israelle,  
Off quhome come oure suet Lady,  
Goddys modyr, myld Mary.  
Tribus may be the lyniage  
Propyrly calde in oure langage.  
Thai had in tyll possessyowne  
The land off repromyssyowne.

[Foremus] on Nyabe  
In to this tyme gat Phorone. 240  
He wes the fyrst [that] in hys dawys

Ordanyt in to Grece the lawys,  
 And before jugys ordanyt he,  
 Be plede causys mot to be.  
 He ordanyt [als] the jugis sete  
 To be for that oys the markete ;  
 Forum he gert it calde be,  
 Eftyre hys awne name, calde Forone.  
 In Latyne, that is the name yhit  
 Off that at we call the markyte.

F. 21.

250

Ysis that was hys systere syne,  
 In Egypte passyde be nawyn,  
 And thare scho kend thame letteratur,  
 And corne to wyne wytht thare culture.  
 For-thi thai sayde that scho thare wes  
 Amang thare goddys as a goddes.  
 Apis, thai say, that he sulde be  
 A sone off this Forone.  
 He pasd the se in Egypte than,  
 Qwhare, thai sayde, he wes weddyt man  
 Tyll this woman calde Ysya,  
 And gode wes calde wyth thare fayre goddys,  
 And Syrapis wes eftyre callyde,  
 As I fynde in storys eftyre taulde.

260

The madyn that tym Mynerva,  
 Besyde a louch in Affryca  
 Wes fwndyn fyrst, that [craftis] sere  
 Kend weylle be werk and be matere.  
 The wemen that tym off the land  
 Scho gert thraly be wyrkand,  
 And mast in wolle to keme and spyn,  
 And clathys wewe to be cled in.  
 This Mynerva that than was  
 Eftyre that was callyde Pallas ;

270

In Traya is swylke ane yle,  
 Thare in scho noryst wes sum quhyllle;  
 And as scho slayne hade a geande  
 That to name was callyd Pallande,  
 Tharefor Pallas was hyre name,  
 That maydyn off so ryalle fame.

280

## CHAP. IV.

This Chapter now tellis  
 How fyrst inhabit wes Rodis.

**A** THOWSAND and sex hundyr yhere  
 Foure scor, foure les to rekyne clere,  
 Before the Incarnatyoun  
 That made all oure salvatyoun,  
 A folk that callyd wes Telchyses,  
 And Caratays that wytth thame wes,  
 Rase agayne Sere Foroné,  
 Off Argos that tyme kyng wes he.  
 He haid in tyll hys company  
 A folk than callyd Parakasy;  
 Thir landys all in Grece ar hale,  
 Suppos thare lordschypys be severale.  
 The Telchyis wencust in that fycht,  
 Be-huwyd on neyde to ta the flycht,  
 Fra pres off men to halde thame fre  
 And in to pes to lywande be.

290

**F. 21. b.** The Ile off Rodys than tuke thai  
 And it inhabytyt fra that day,  
 Be thame and thare successyown  
 For trayst and fre possessyown.

300



## CHAP. V.

This Chappter schall tell how ryght  
Off Josephis wyt and hys forspicht.

**A** THOWSAND and sewyn hundyre yhere,  
And ane and saxty reknyt clere,  
Befor the Natyvyte,  
In Egypte that fertylyte  
Begowth to rys in Josephys dayis,  
As in hys cronykyl Orose sayis,  
Sewyn yher owt contynnand,  
Wytth othir sewyn nest folowand  
Off gret derth and hungare sare ;  
That had the pupylle noyit mare, 310  
Ne ware that Joseph, wytth hys wyt,  
Hade sene remede and helpe for it.  
Jacobys sone this Joseph was,  
Perfyt, and off sik connandnas  
That he cowth wele bayth ken and se  
Quhat land suld yhelde or fertyll be.  
He wes the fyrst that dremys rede  
That men seys slepand in thare bede ;  
Off swylk mystyk wysyownys  
He mad gud exposytyownys. 320  
His bredyre ten salde hym for-thi  
Tyll strang merchandys for inwy.  
Than had hym in tyll Egypt than,  
Thare he be-come the kyngys man,  
That helde hym in tyll gret daynté,  
And put hys gud in hys powsté.

His brodyre than that had hym saulde,  
 As I to yow be-fore has talde  
 Slew a kyde, and in the blude  
 Wet the gown that he in yhude, 330  
 And gherth hys fadyre be that ken  
 That wolwys had hym weryid then.  
 Nevertheles, for hys bownté,  
 Wyttht the kyng welle lufyt wes he  
 Off Egypt, als and wyttht the Quene.  
 Fra scho off hym a sycht had sene,  
 [Scho] walde have gert hym ly hyr by :  
 Bot he refoysit that curtasly,  
 For the wyrchype off hys larde,  
 That all hys gude put in hys warde ; 340  
 Bot alanerly the Quene,

F. 22.

Scho raryde lowde wyth cryis kene,  
 Sayd Joseph wald haffe lyne hyr by,  
 Qwhare to [scho] wowyt hym besely.  
 Than was he put in hard presowne  
 Quhyll the Kyng gat [a] vesyown,  
 Slepand sawe in tyll hys bede,  
 That nane cowth than bot Joseph rede,  
 He tauld hym be that drem in all  
 How thai fourteyne yhere sulde falle. 350

Than made he Joseph, off hys land,  
 Stewarde hale and luftenand ;  
 He gherth that sevyn yhere gadryt be  
 Alkyne korne in swylk plente,  
 That in tyll tyme off hungar sare,  
 The folk that full relevyde ware,  
 And othir mony cowntré sere,  
 Tyll Egypt that tym drawyn were,  
 To by wyttaylle for thare fude.

Thus Joseph, throwch hys wërtu gude, 360  
 Stuffyt hys lord weylle off moné,  
 And gert the folk relewyde be,  
 And throwcht hys slycht, and hys quentys,  
 Off Egypte all the tennandrys  
 He redemyt thare agayne,  
 And mayde thame to the kyng demayne ;  
 And in husbandry for ferme,  
 Ilkè yhere at certane terme,  
 He set thai landys and the male,  
 The fyft part off thare wynnyng hale, 370  
 Ilkè yhere, in tyll certane,  
 At termes to the kyng was tane ;  
 And in tyll Egypte yhit thai say  
 That lawch is kepyt to this day.  
 And for sik wërtu as he pruwyt,  
 Sowerandly hys lard hym lufyt,  
 And gaue hym large and full powere  
 To do that lykand tyll hym were.  
 Hys brethir than come tyll hym als,  
 (That for inwy and cownsale fals, 380  
 For the dremys that he taulde,  
 To strang marchandys hade hym saulde,)  
 To by off hym wyttayle thare,  
 For in tyll gret dystres thai ware :  
 Bot knowlage off hym had thai nane,  
 He kend thaim nevyrtheles ilkane,  
 And on thame threpyt thai ware spyis,  
 Or to the kyng kyd innymys.  
 All thus he taryid thame so fast  
 Tyll thame behuvid at the last, 390  
 For tyll lewe ane wyttht hym on nede,  
 The lawe tyll pas hame full gud spede,

F. 22. b.

And in hy tyll hym to bryng  
Benjamin, thaire brodyre yhing,  
Thai left than wytth hym Symeon  
And hame thai passyd sone on-one.  
Thai taulde thare fadyr how thai ware  
Anoyid in tyll Egypt sare ;  
And Benjamin yhet, at the last,  
Wytth thame in tyll Egypt past, 400  
Mekyll agayne hys fadyr wylle,  
That had his presumptyoune off thaim ille.  
Yhet ware thai set in hardare pres  
Fra Benjamyn thare cummyn wes ;  
Bot at the last Joseph thame taulde  
He wes thare bruthire that thai saulde,  
And for thare hele in to that land  
God had hym sawyt than lefand :  
Than for his fadyr he gert thame pas,  
That taulde hym Joseph lewand was ; 410  
With that worde he was so fayne  
That his speryt quyknyt agayne,  
And buskyt hym delyverly  
In Egipt for to pas in hy,  
To se hys sone that for hym sende,  
And thare hys lyff for to take end.  
All thus, as yhe have herd me telle,  
In Egypt fyrst come Israelle.  
In this tyme Primotheus yhing,  
Off Caucasus baythe lorde and kyng, 420  
Wytth in the landys off Asy,  
Kend thame fyrst phylosophy ;  
He wes the brodyre off Atland,  
That kyng was than off Affrykland,  
Thai fenyhe that tyme he mad men,

For caus he gert thame craftis ken ;  
 Figuris off men he made alsua,  
 The quhylkis he gart be craftis ga.  
 Ryngys fyrst he gert men were,  
 Thaim he gert the myd fyngyre bere, 430  
 For fra that to the hart, he sayde,  
 Ane [e]wyn strekande wayne wes layde ;  
 And alsua for mast belysyng,  
 Thare-on he gert thame were the ryng.

Tritolomus; that tyme alsua  
 Be nawyne passyd in Grecia,  
 Thare he kend thame wytth mare cure,  
 Than thai ware wont to ma culture.  
 That tyme alsua Dame Ceres,  
 That off corne wes callyde goddes, 440  
 Fyrst gert corne wytth mesure mete,  
 As boll, or pek, or wytth fyrlete,  
 Quhare befor bot in to stake,  
 Or hepys on erde thai oysyde to make,  
 F. 23. Tharefor scho was callyde Demetra  
 In all the land off Greceya.

# CHAP. VI.

*Off Bewcalponys flude*  
*This hillys key sumtyme our-phude.*

**A** THOUSAND and fyve hundyr yhere,  
 Thre score and twa, to rekyn clere,  
 Befor the Incarnatyoun,  
 In Athenys Amphytryone, 450  
 The fadyr than off Ercules,

That the gret geand quhylum wes,  
Fra Cycrope wes the thryde kyng  
That hade Athenys in governyng.  
Than all the folk off Tessaly  
Had nere bene drownyt suddanly  
Wytht a fers falland flude,  
Thai ware a fewe tyll hyllys yhude.  
Wpone ane hille was callyd Parnas  
Thare thai ware that sawfyte was. 460  
All the landys thare abowt.  
Dewcalyone than aucht, but dowt  
That resawyt wytht gud wyll  
All tha that that tyme fled hym tyll,  
The men that tyme thai said wdone,  
Wes throw hym reformyd sone.

For this Dewcalion in thai dayis  
Wytht hys wyff Pyrra, Owde sayis,  
Ay wpe fra hyll tyll hille past,  
And on the hiest at the last 470  
Thai oure-bade that felowne flude,  
And to the planys than thai yhude;  
Thare thaire frendys and thare kyn  
Thai myssyd all, bathe mare and myn,  
Na thai couth fynd na lyvand man  
In all thai landys sterand than,  
Thai ware wdone so halyly,  
All drownyt in that dyluwy.  
Than tyll a cove Dewcalyon,  
And hys wyff Pyrra, passyd onone, 480  
And devoutly thai mad thare  
Tyll a goddes thare prayare,  
Tyll wyttyre thame, for hyr pyté,  
How mankynd mycht reformyt be.

Thus quhyll thai ware prayand fast.  
 Thai war ansuert, at the last,  
 Owt off the cove that thai sulde ga,  
 And thare modyre banys ta,  
 And tha be-hynd thame thai sulde cast.  
 Than owt off the cove thai past,  
 And esytyde on gret manere,

490

F. 28. b.

Quhat sulde betakyn this ansuere.  
 For sua the Spat had all oure-gane  
 That thai gat nowthire flesch na bane  
 Off thare modyr, and for-thi  
 Thai ferlyid off this hugely.  
 Thus quhill thai studyit this Pyrra,  
 The first spekyne begouth to ma ;  
 For rydely wylis in wemen  
 Sunnere apperys than in men ;  
 Scho sayde, " I can be na way trowe  
 That othir modyre have we nowe  
 Than the erde, and the stanyis  
 Ar thare-off, as I trowe, the banys.  
 Therefore I red that we ga fast,  
 And lat behynd ws stanyis kast."

500

Wytht this Deucalyon dyde all hale,  
 As Pyrra gaŵe hym to consalle,  
 And off tha castys eftyre grewe  
 Men and wemen all off newe ;  
 Swa off thare kyn thai stuffyt the land  
 Qwhar before thai war duelland.

510

Eftyre gret mortalyteis  
 Yhet men thus growys in sere cuntreis.  
 In to the kynryc yhett off Frawnce  
 Is nane so redy craft no chawnce  
 Off [auld] kyn newe to fynde,

Than to cast stanyis fast behynde.  
 For-thi, tyll conclusyoun  
 Off this reformatyoun, 520  
 This Ovide maide thir ilk wers,  
 In metyre, that I wyll rehers.

*(Inde genus durum sumus experiens quoque  
 malum :*

*Et documenta damus, qua simus origine nati.)*

"Thareoff, he says, be kynd we ta  
 For tyll be dowre and harde alsua,  
 And we mak kend in propyrte  
 Quharoff ony kynd suld commyn be."

All this that I rehersyt now  
 Standys yow noucht on nede to trowe,  
 For thare is nane that can this rede  
 Amange the Artikylls off the Crede. 530

## CHAP. VII.

This Chapteris now will phow telle  
 The wrakis that in Egipte fell.

**A** THOWSAND and fyve hundyre yhere,  
 And sevyn and fowrty hale, but were,  
 [Before the Incarnatioun,  
 That was oure salvatioun]  
 The wrakys ten in Egypt ras,  
 For that Israelle anoyit was  
 In serwytute and fowle thrylage,  
 Throwcht the Kyng and hys barnage,  
 F. 24. That in tylle Egypt ras of newe  
 And off Joseph no thyng knewe; 540



Bot thowcht ille in sic multitwde  
 That alyenys amang thame stwde.  
 Quhen Jacob, as yhe hard me telle,  
 That callyde befor wes Israelle,  
 Hys son Joseph for to se  
 In Egypt pasd wytth his menyhe,  
 And browcht in wyth hym, taulde and sene  
 Thre scor off bodyis and fyftene,  
 That wytth hym in tyll Egypt past  
 And thare syne thai grewe so fast, 550  
 Off industry and ingyne,  
 In byrth, and off wertu syne,  
 And off welth in sufficyans,  
 And ryches in tyll haboundans,  
 That the Egyptys for inwy  
 Anoyit thame dispituisly,  
 And in thaire werk thayme pynowrys made  
 That growyn wp was in manhade,  
 The Kyng gert commawnd, but remede,  
 The knawe barnys sulde be put to dede 560  
 Off Israelytys [ewyr]-ilkane,  
 Than to be borne that sauff ware nane ;  
 Bot all the madyne barnys he  
 Than to be borne bad sawfyde be.

Thus that Kyng and hys barnage  
 Helde this folk in gryt thryllage,  
 Na wald delyver on na wys  
 Thame to mak thare sacrifyce  
 Tyll God off mycht, in wyldyrnes,  
 As [he] was byddyn be Moyses, 570  
 Quhille fyrst thare wattyre turnyt in blude,  
 Paddokkis syne thare land our-yhude,  
 Syne byttyn thai ware wytth cynyphe,

That a kynde off gleggys wes,  
 And alkyn kynd off gleggys als,  
 That gart thame yhuke baythe hede and hala.  
 Syne in thare bleddyris boldnyt bylys,  
 And alkyn bruke and scab that vyle is,  
 Syne comune qwalm off all thare fe,  
 That scheype, or nowyt, or gayte sulde be, 580  
 And at the last in generale  
 All thaire ayrys deyde hale,  
 Be so fers mortal[it]e,  
 That nane in to that lande wes fre,  
 Than hys eldest barne wes dede,  
 But ony manere off remede,  
 Quhyll off the land thai lete thame pas.

F. 24. b.

Moyses than thare chyftane was,  
 And gaue thame lawys to lyve by,  
 Wrytyn in the Mownt off Synay. 590  
 In Egypte als quha wald kene  
 Thare felle than wrakis ma than tene,  
 As sayis the Buke off Exodi,  
 Quha wyll it se perfytly,  
 But for thai war noucht all so felle,  
 Swa apert, na swa cruelle,  
 Thai ar foryhet wytht autorys sere  
 That mentyown mays off this mater;  
 Bot eftyr thame, as sum men sayis,  
 War notyt the forbodyn dayis, 600  
 In ilk moneth off the yhere,  
 Begynand fyrst in Januere.  
 Bot thai of Egypt noucht for-thi,  
 Swa wys ware in astronomy,  
 That it is noucht to trowe thai walde  
 All thir dayis forbodyn halde,

Na thai walde in thame begyne  
 And do that thai saw profyt in  
 As to byggyn, and to wyage  
 In marchandys or pilgrimage ; 610  
 Bot off the elementis sere  
 Thai that hafys thaire matere,  
 Or felys thare complexiownys  
 Movyd be constellatyownys  
 Discordand, it ware nought to skylle  
 That thir dayis ware kepyt tylle  
 The Egyptis in perplexyte,  
 For dowt thare land sulde peryst be,  
 And wytth thai wengeance all wndone ;  
 Sum off thame tuk purpos sone 620  
 Out off [that] land all qwynt to pas ;  
 Ane Dynys Bachus off thame was,  
 That for that dowt all Egypt left,  
 And Argos mad in Grece thareft.  
 He kende the men off that cuntre  
 Off wynys the subtylte,  
 Quhare[-in] he conand was in alle ;  
 Tharfore hym god off wyne thai calle.  
 That tyme als Cycrope kyng  
 Off Egypte drede the wndoyng, 630  
 In to Grece sone comyn was,  
 Duelland fra thine in Athenas.

## CHAP. VIII.

*This Chapter sall tell how all hale  
Off the Scottis Orggynale.*

OWTE off Sythy in that quhyll  
In to Grece come Schyre Newylle,  
That wes off deid a worthy man,  
And in to Grece gryt lordschype wan:  
He wes nere in the twenty degré  
Be lyne discendande fra Noye,  
Off his yhungast son, but lete,  
F. 25. That to name was callyd Japhete. 640  
Off Sem hys brodyre come Presthade;  
And off this Japhet come Knychthade.  
This Newyle was fra this Noye,  
As I sayde ayre, the twenty degré,  
And had a sone callyd Gedyelle-Glays;  
And as the story off hym says,  
To wiff weddyt Scota yhing  
Pharois douchtyr off Egypt kyng.  
This Gedeyl-Glays was off gret pyth,  
And warnyst weyle off wyt thar-wyth; 650  
He gat on Scota barnys fayre,  
And ane of thai sulde have bene ayre  
Tyll Pharao, that drownyt was  
In to the Reide Se, at that chas,  
That the Egyptis maid so felle  
Wpon the folk off Israelle;  
Quhare all that folk our-passyd dry,  
The Egyptis drownyt halyly.

This Gedeyl-Glays, quhen he sawe  
 The land off Egypt, hey and lawe, 660  
 That in all thyng wes profytabelle,  
 And tyll hys lyvyng delytabylle,  
 Hys duellyng thare he thought to ma,  
 And hys awantage off it to ta,  
 Sen hys barnys apperyt to be  
 Lordis off that rywawte.

Bot the barnage off the land,  
 That remaynyde than lywand,  
 Thought thai ware agrevyt sare  
 Throw the wrakis, thai tholyt are : 670  
 Be that ensawmpyll, off consalle  
 All alienys thai banyst hale.

Quharefor this ilke Gedeil-Glays  
 Hys way owte off that [lande] he tays,  
 And throwcht the Meyre Medyterrayne  
 He passyde, quhille he come in Spayne ;  
 And on the watter off Hybery  
 He byggyde the towne off Brygancy :  
 Thare nowe the towne is off Galys,  
 Quhare that, thai say, Sanct Jamys lyis : 680  
 And thai that duelt than in that land  
 He gert be tyll hym obeysand.

Syne, as he passyde on a day  
 Throwcht that land in tyll his play,  
 Oure fra hym be-yhonde a sé  
 He kend lyand a gret cuntré.  
 Than speryt he thraly off that land,  
 Quha sulde be in tyll it duelland ;  
 Bot ansuere tharof gat he nane,  
 Na nakyn knowlage in certane. 690

F. 25. b. In hy than gert he schyppys thre

Wyttht armyd men sone stuffyt be,  
 And gert thame pas be Se thare way  
 To se that land how that it lay,  
 And gyff that it wes eyth to wyn,  
 And quha was duelland it wytthtin.  
 Wyttht wynd at wyll that folk than past,  
 And in the land come at the last  
 At ane yle, wes in the se,  
 Off gret space and off quantyte : 700  
 Bot thai, that duelt in to that yle,  
 Wnhonest was and inutyle;  
 Tharefore thai, that come to spy  
 That land, thai dressyt wnmoderly;  
 For sum off thame thai slewe rycht thare  
 Wyttht arys, sum thai dang rycht sare.  
 [And thay that happenit to get away  
 Held to their schippis, but delay.]  
 Syne alle that yle thai passyde abowt,  
 And sawe thai mycht, but drede or dowte, 710  
 Wyn it hally to thare wylle,  
 Swa that thai wertu had thare-tylle.  
 Thai tuk wpe sayle, and passyd in hy  
 Wyttht wynd at wyll to Brygancy  
 Quhare Gedeyl-Glays wes our-tane  
 Off case wyttht dede than subitane;  
 Bot his body wyttht honowre  
 Wes put in tyll honest sepulture  
 Wyttht swylk oys and solempnyte,  
 As that tyme wes in that cuntré 720

Thir spyis taulde hys barnys sone,  
 In to that Ile howe thai [had] done;  
 And said that it wes eytht to wyn,  
 For thai, that duelt that Ile within,

War sottys wyle off na walu,  
 Na governyde thame be na wertu ;  
 And at that land wes profytabille  
 And tyll all levyng dylitabyll :  
 Tharefor thai sayde, it wes thare wylle,  
 And full consaylle thai gawe thar-tylle, 730  
 For to pass that Ile wytht-in,  
 And it be conquest to thame wyn,  
 And wytht thare stuffe it occupy  
 For thame and tharis herytabilly ;  
 Repruwand thame as sottis wyle ;  
 Sene thai mycht doutles, but peryle,  
 Tyll thame and all thare lynyage  
 That lordschipe wyn in herytage,  
 For to leve it fayntly,  
 And lyve as lowndreris cayttevely. 740

A sone off Gedeyl-Glays than,  
 Heber, that was a douchty man,  
 Thought it wes tyll hym lywyng fayre,  
 Syne he wes noucht hys fadyre ayre ;  
 He sone inclynynd to thare consalle,  
 And chesyt hym men, and gat wytalle,  
 F. 26. And layde his schyppys to the Se,  
 And entryde in wytht hys menyhe.  
 He tuke wpe sayle, and furth he past,  
 And in the Ile come at the last : 750  
 Alle the men thare he slewe down,  
 That was noucht tyll hys byddyng bown ;  
 Off the lave he tuk homage.  
 Thus all that land in herytage  
 He wane all hale, and maid it fre  
 Tyll hym and hys posteryte.  
 So occupyd he furth the land

Wyttht all, that evyr thare-in he fand,  
 And Scotland gert call that Ile,  
 For honowre off hys modyr quhille, 760  
 That Scota was wyttht all men calde,  
 As yhe [haf] herd before be-talde.  
 Hybernia thai callyd it syne  
 Off this Hiberus, in Latyne,  
 That Yrland we ws to calle  
 Now in to oure langage alle.  
 Off Hiber thai come halyly,  
 Tha we oys to call Yrschery ;  
 And this lady callyd Scota  
 All thir Scottis ar cummyn fra, 770  
 As yhe may in this proces here,  
 Quhen we ar cummyn to that matere.

## CHAP. IX.

*On othir wiis this Chapitere  
 Says the Bische cummyn were.*

**B**OT be the Brwte, yhit Barbare sayis,  
 Off Yryschry all othir wayis,  
 That Gurgwnt-Badruck quhille wes kyng,  
 And Bretayne had in governyng ;  
 Worthy wycht and wyse wes he.  
 As [he] passyd anys oure the sé  
 Fra Denmark, that he wonnyn hade,  
 Be Orknay hame he tuk the trade ; 780  
 And thare schyppys he fand thretty  
 Wyttht off Spaynalys a cumpany,  
 That flemyt ware off thaire cuntré,



And lang ware waverand on the sé.  
 Partoloym, that the ledare was  
 Off thame, besoucht the Kyng off gras  
 Tyll tak thame tyll hym off duellyng,  
 And gyff thame land for thare wonnyng.  
 He send wytth thame sum off his men  
 Tyll Yrland, that was noucht yhit then 790  
 Inhabityde, bot wes wast haly :  
 Off this folk come the Yryschry,  
 That duelt in Yrland to this day,  
 And Yrysch off Yrland callyd ar thai.

Yhit is thare odyre awtorrys sere,  
 That tretis part of this matere ;  
 Bot thai oys noucht to tell hys name,  
 F. 26. b. Hys state, his gre, na yhyt hys fame,  
 Off quhame the Yrysch cumyn are ;  
 Bot sayis, quhen that Egyptys ware 800  
 Drownyde in the Reid Se,  
 The lave, that levyt in that cuntré,  
 Banyst fra thame a gentyll-man,  
 That duelland amangys thame wes than ;  
 A Sytyk he wes off natyowne,  
 Conand in all discretyoune.  
 Thai dowtyd at hys senyhoury  
 Suld thame abawndown halyly,  
 Be that ensawmpyll, that thai ware  
 Befor throucht strangerys noyid sare. 810  
 This gentyll-man and hys menyhe  
 Gat schypppyng sone, and tuk the sé,  
 And saylyd Affryk all abowt  
 Drewnyn wytth syndry stormys stoute,  
 And by othire costis sere,  
 That spedys noucht to rekyn here ;

Syne in to [the] Spaynyhe sé  
He hapnyd to cum wytht his menyhe,  
Quhare he tuke land; and mony yhere  
He and hys thare-in duelland were : 820  
Sa he and all hys progeny  
Held that land ay herytabyly.

Owte off Spaynyhe than in Irland  
Thai come, and wan all hale that land,  
Quhen passyd wes twelf hundyr yhere  
Fra the Egyptis drownyd were  
Chasand the pupyll of Israelle,  
As yhe have herd me before telle,  
Quha that wyll cast date to date,  
As autoris in thaire storyis wrate, 830  
And yhere wyll rekyn eftyr yhere,  
The sowme sall be thre hundyr clere  
And twa and fyfty yhere befor  
Or Jhesu wes off Mary born.

I wyll noucht hald thir oppynnyownys ale  
Contrary, for thai mycht weylle fale;  
Bot it is doweys be the date,  
That Cronyklaris befor me wrate,  
And othir incydens sere  
Accordand part to this matere. 840

Bot quhethir it be, or othir wayis,  
Than all thir autoris before me sayis,  
For certane yhe sall wnderstand,  
That owt off Spaynyhe in tyll Yrland  
The Scottis come, that to this day  
Havys it and Scotland haldyn ay.  
In [the] Thryde Eylde, wytht-owtyn les  
In Spaynyhe the Scottis cummyn wes.  
Wythtin the Ferd Eylde, Yrland

Was to the Scottis obeyschande. 850  
 F. 27. Syn sum off thame can occupy  
 Parte off the north off Brettany.  
 Than wes in it thre Natyownys,  
 Scottis, Peychtis, and Brettownys.  
 Part off the Scottis yhit left in Spayn,  
 Quhen thai war cumyn in tyll Brettane,  
 And Scottis thai spekys halyly,  
 And yhit are callyde Navarry.

## CHAP. X.

Or I forthire nome procede,  
 Off the Genealogi will I rede.

IN the Fyrst Buk, gyffe that yhe 860  
 Wele nere the last end rede and se,  
 Thare may yhe fynd the Genealogeys,  
 That in tyll al parte sygnyfis,  
 As oure Kyng suld cumyn be  
 Discendand ewyn fra Noe.  
 And quhy that thai disseveryde are,  
 Yhe wyt or yhe ga forthirmare.

In the Thryd Eylde, storys sere  
 Sayis, the Scottis cummyn were  
 Wytth Gedeyl-Glays in Spaynyhe land, 870  
 And in the Ferde Eylde in Yrland,  
 And in the Fyft Eylde lang beforne,  
 In Scotland, or that God wes born.  
 Thir Genealogyis I maide for-thi  
 Devysyde, as yhe se, dystynctly.  
 And [als] suppos I fand be name

Thame wryttyn all, yhit off the fame  
 Off mony, and the dowchtynes,  
 That lang tyme swa fordelyd wes,  
 Mater nane I worthy fand,  
 That tyll yhoure heryng were plesand 880  
 In tyll this Tretys for to wryte :  
 Swa suld I dulle hale yhoure delyte,  
 And yhe sulde call it bot arane,  
 Or that I had thame half ourtane,  
 Gyff I sulde tell thaim halyly,  
 As thai are in the Genealogy  
 Wyttht-oute othir distynctyowne.

For-thi was myn intentyoune  
 Amange the Eyldys thame to drawe,  
 Dyviside swa, that yhe mycht knawe 890  
 Quha that war orygynale,  
 The begynnyng pryncipalle  
 Off ilke cuntré, quhar that thai  
 Occupyde thare-eftyre ay :  
 [And sa] I suld excusyde be,  
 Gyff I mak noucht thare entre,  
 Quhen thare entre fyrst began  
 In to thai landis that thai wan,  
 Tyll othir statis accordand  
 In Rome or Israelle than regnand 900

F. 27. b.

Befor the Incarnatyoun,  
 For I fynde na discriptyoun.  
 Than I fynd sic discrepance,  
 That I am noucht off sufficiance  
 For to gare thame all acorde ;  
 Bot sympylly for to recorde  
 Wyttht-in the Eyldis, that than felle ;  
 And nane othir termys telle.

And, quhare I left, now to begyn,  
 I have in purpos, or I blyne, 910  
 As in the Fyrst Buke, off Woden,  
 That fadyr wes off mony men ;  
 Hys swyn wes callide Bedagyn,  
 That fadyr wes tyll Brondyn ;  
 This Brondyn eftyr that  
 Was Fredgarys fadyr, and hym gat ;  
 He had ane swyn was callide Frewyne,  
 That Wyggews gat eftyr syn ;  
 Hys swyn Gennus gat Elfeus,  
 That fadyr wes off Elesyn ; 920  
 Elesyn gat Kerdyn,  
 That awcht West Saxone halyly ;  
 The fyrst Kyng tharoff was he,  
 That it fyrst awcht in reawte :  
 He gat Kynrycyn eftyr syn,  
 That fadyr wes off Cealfyne ;  
 Hys swyn Cwtwyne gat Kude ;  
 Cedwaldys fadyr syne wes he,  
 And hys sown Conrad eftyr that  
 Inys brodyre Inglis gat. 930

Now off thir or I tell ma,  
 Tyll Geddyll-Glays wyll I ga.  
 This Geddyll-Glays eftyr that  
 To sown Eber-Stiwut gat ;  
 Eber syne, as I herd telle,  
 Fadyr was off Novaele ;  
 This Novael gat Node ;  
 And eftyr Aldoyt gat he ;  
 Off hym come eftyr Erkada,  
 That gat Doat, and he Brata. 940  
 Hys swyn Brogyne gat Broge

That gat thare-ef tyre Veande ;  
Syne hys swne Myle gat  
Mylet off Spayn swne ef tyre that ;  
This Mylet ef tyre had, but drede,

Tyll son Ermeon-Malanseyde ;  
Off hys swn Jaer-Olphaca  
Come Etoyre ; and ef tyre tha  
This Etoyr gat Phaleke,

That fadyr wes tyl Tygerneke ;

950

And hys swn ef tyr Enbaca  
Had a swn calde Synreca ;

Fyakak-Labryn ef tyr that  
Eugws-Olmwrge to swn gat ;

F. 28.

His sown Temaelle gat Den ;  
And Syrne-Elkade gat Olten ;

Hys swn wes Moyadade-Fael,  
That gat Glays, as I herd tel ;

Off hys sone Edoym ef tyr that

Come Coyem-Dwff, that to sone gat

960

Symon-Breke, that off Spayné land

That Stane browcht fyrst in tyll Yrland,

That syne wes callyd mony yhere

The Kyngys Stane in Scotland here,

As yhe sall here ef tyr swne,

Quhen this proces tyll it is dwne.

## CHAP. XI.

*Now sal ghe here off Danaus,  
And off his brodire Egistus.*

**A** THOWSAND and fyve hundyr yhere,  
And twa and fourty full, but were,  
Before the Natywyte  
That wes the caus off alle oure gle, 970  
In tyll Egypt Schyr Danaws,  
That brodyr wes tyll Egistus,  
Off dowchtrys nowmbryde had fyfty.  
Egyst had sownnys sa mony.  
Thai swynnys slayne war everilkane  
Wyttht thai dowchtrys to sauffe ane,  
That gat away all prewaly.  
Egystus tharfore fellownly  
Gert hym off Egypt banyst be ;  
In Argos than aryvyd he, 980  
Quhare Tenelaus than wes kyng,  
That made hym curtays welcummyng,  
And ressaŵyde [hym] in that nede  
And dyde hym profyt and fordede.  
Bot he dyde vylny thare agayne,  
This Tenelaus he walde have slayne  
And be [the] lest hym banyst he  
The men all hale off that cuntré,  
He enbawndownyd all hym tylle,  
And maid thame bowswm tyll his wylle ; 990  
And swa he regnyde in hys stede,  
That banyst was for dowl off dede.

Than Busyrys in Egypte als  
Fellown ostlare wes, and fals,  
And hys devotyounes welle were,  
And hys relygyowne cruelere  
Than ony wychcraft mycht be,  
Or tyrandry in ony gre.

Quhen tyll hys gestis he maid gud chere,  
And welcummyd thame on fayre manere,

1000

And syne to thame wald ta gud kepe,  
Quhyll thai ware sadly fallyn on slepe;  
Than stillely walde he to thame ga,  
And scheyre thare thropyll boll in twa,  
And syne thare blud walde sacryfy  
Tyll his goddys devotly,

Thynkand thai sulde be parcynere  
Off mede and payne that he sulde bere;  
For he sayd, that sacryfyce  
Plesyde hys goddys mony wys.

1010

Tereus in that tyme alsua  
Lyin had by [his] systyris twa,  
Prognas callyd, and Phylomene,  
Off that incest fell murthyr kene,  
And ane wgsun mangery  
Of wlatsum corsys and wgly;  
For quhen the tane full wytting had  
Hyr systyr had lessyde hyr maydynhade,  
Hyr systyr twyng fyrst schare scho owt;  
Hyr awyne sone syne scho slw, but dowt,  
And sethyde hym in pecis smalle,  
And gert hys fadyr eyt hym alle.

1020

Perseus in this tyme alsua  
Come owt off Grece in Asya,  
Quhare all that tyme the folk were



Rude off condityoune and off fere,  
 Bot he thame wan, throwcht hys traŵaylle,  
 And fors off fycht in harde batayle,  
 And gert thame tyll hym buxum be ;  
 Syn Pers he gert call that contré. 1030

On this wys, as I maid rehers,  
 The kynryk fyrst begouth off Pers.

Thai fenyheid fabyllis I wyll forbere  
 That Ovyde tellys how Jupitere  
 Gert the Egyle, as we rede,  
 Rawys the barne Ganemede,  
 And bere hym wp in to the ayre  
 Quhare Jupitere maid his repayre,  
 Thare, for hys soverane bewte,  
 Lemman to that god wes he. 1040

And spensare alsua quhen Ebes  
 Removyd to that offys wes.  
 How Tantalus that wes as fere  
 Tyll goddys and alye nere,  
 This Ganymede on this wys reft,  
 Tuk and held hym lang thare-est,  
 Tyll lust off this Jupitere,  
 Or tyll hys awn lust famelyere.  
 How Pelops, the sone off Tantalus,  
 Ras agayne Schyr Dardanus, 1050  
 That lord off Troy was in thai dayis.

How Perseus als, as fabyll sayis,  
 Wytth Tebanys and Spertanyis  
 Maid mony syndry jupertyis :  
 And how Edippus, as sayis Stace,  
 That slaare off hys fadyre wace,  
 Gat on hys modyr sonnys twa,  
 And was hys barnys brodyr swa :

And howe the barne Ethyocles  
 Faucht wytht hys brodyr Polynces, 1060  
 In that intent that bayth ware sene  
 Fechtaris and manslaaris kene :  
 And othir fenyheid fabyllis sere,  
 I wyll forbere to wryt in here ;  
 For gyff I dyde as othir wrate  
 In this plas I sulde set thaire date.

## CHAP. XII.

*Off Josue now sall phe here,  
 In this next folowmand Chapitere.*

**I**N to this tyme that I off telle  
 Was Josue duk in Israel,  
 The wattyre off Jordane in his dayis  
 Was dry, as the story sayis, 1070  
 Quhill that the folk oure passyd fre  
 Off Jeryco the gret cyté  
 And all thai that he fand tharein,  
 Man and best, bath mare and myn,  
 He wndyde and slw all down  
 And broucht it tyll confusiounne,  
 Bot golde, sylvyr, and wessale  
 Glenly maide off gud metalle,  
 He gert halow wytht honoure  
 Tyll Goddys oys, and hys tresoure. 1080  
 That tyme als, in that cyté,  
 He gert that woman sawffyt be  
 That sauffyt hys spyis wysly  
 Quhen thai come that towne to spy.

Thare Achor als the mantyll stall,  
 The sylver and the rewell wyth alle,  
 And ran in sentens off courssyng  
 For that he stal and brak byddyng;  
 Tharefore Josue, but remede,  
 Hym gert be stanyde thare to dede.

1090

Syn he passyde for tyll assay  
 Gyff he mycht wyn the town off Hay;  
 He wan wytth juperty that towne  
 And off it slwe twelf thousand downe.  
 Fra thine, wytth hys ost onone,  
 He past to wyn Gabaone,  
 Bot, throucht dyssayte, the Gabaonytys  
 Wes frendyt wytth the Israelytis;  
 For quhen thai hard that Josue  
 Wes to cum wytth hys ryawte,  
 Thai dowtyt sare that he walde wyn  
 Thare landys, and thare cyté bryne,  
 As he to Jericho had done,  
 And tyll Hay thare efftyr sone,

1100

F. 29. b

Messengerys to Josue  
 Thai gart off consalle ordanyt be,  
 Wytth aulde hose and rywine schone,  
 And mowlyde brede in kartis done;  
 Be thai taknys to be kend  
 That thai ware off fer landis sende.  
 On this wys the Gabaonytis  
 Come chargyt to the Israelitis,  
 And delyveryde in thare presence  
 Tyll Josue playnly, be credence;  
 And sayd, thai come off landys fere,  
 Quhar that thai herd off his powere,  
 And off thai landys that thai had

1110

Tyll Jowys wes na promissyowne maide ;  
Bot off thaire wyll to Josue  
In serwys thai walde oblysyde be, 1120  
And this, thai said, wes in thare intent  
That thame in message thiddyre sent.  
Tyll thir wordys Josue  
Trowyd, and thame ressaŵyde he,  
And off his ost the lardis thare  
Be athe to thame all bundyn ware.  
Wytth-in thre dayis eftyre that,  
Quhen Josue full wyttyng gat  
That he dissaŵyd wes, but were,  
He arguyt thame on fel manere ; 1130  
And thai excusyd thame symply  
And said, thai dyd it qwhently ;  
For it wes gert thame wndyrstand  
That thai walde occupy thare land,  
And hald it in possessione,  
And bryng thame tyll confusioune ;  
Sen thai ware sa thame bundyn tyll  
Thai mycht do wyth thame all thare wylle.  
The multitwde than wes rycht lath  
For to sauff thame, for thaire ath 1140  
Thai sayde, wes be surreptyoune,  
Gyle, and circumventyoun,  
Sworne befor that, and for-thi  
Tha ware excusyd lauchfully  
All thai cuchowris for to ta  
And, but mercy, pyne and sla.  
Bot the lordys walde noucht wndo  
The band that thai war oblysyd to,  
Bot said, thame thought it wondyre lath  
For to be argwyt off thare ath ; 1150

F. 80.

For bath to frend and fa sulde be  
 Fayth evynlik kepyd in leawte.  
 On this thai yheid all tyll consale  
 And sone thai delyveryt hale  
 To ta thare gudys, and thare towne  
 Hale in thare possessioun,  
 And mak thai men thare travalourys,  
 Masownys, wrychtys, and pynowrys,  
 And sa thai mycht revengyde be,  
 Excusand baytht fayth and leawte.  
 Thus maid thai schort delyverance  
 And gert fullfill all ordynance.

1160

Off this manere Kyngys fyve,  
 That marchyd nere thame herde belyve,  
 Wytth thare ost thai come onone  
 For tyll assege Gabaone,  
 And thai wytth-in, on set consalle,  
 Askyt at Josue suppoualle.  
 Wytth hys ost thane he come on  
 And chasyd thai folk throucht Bethoron,  
 For off hym thai had sic drede  
 That thame behuwyde [to] fle onnede;  
 Haylstanys gryt in to that flycht  
 Sa hewy thyk and hard can lycht,  
 That [ma] peryst in that schoure  
 Than swerdys stikkyt in that stowre,  
 And quhyll thai ware in to the chas  
 The swn rycht fast avaland was,  
 And the mwne agayne the nyght,  
 As in mydwaxand tuk the hycht.  
 Than Josue wytth devotyoun  
 Devotly maid his orysoun  
 To God, and swa than gert he stand

1170

1180

Swn and mwne batht wnmovand,  
 Fra thine the space hale off a day,  
 That never yhit, as I harde say,  
 Sa lang a day wes sene beforne  
 Wyttht al thai that that tyme wes borne :

In that tyme hys fays qwyte

Fullyly Josue discomfyte.

1190

All this tyme in to that chas,

Quhyll Josue fast prekande was,

He persaŵyde that Kyngys fyve

Crape in a cove to sawffe thare lyve ;

Than off that cove the mouth gert he

, Wyttht stannys gryt sone dyttyde be,

Quhyll that all the chas was done,

And syne he gert, wyttht-owtyn hone,

Owt off that cove thai Kyngys bryng

And thame wpone a gallows hyng.

1200

Off Josue and hys wyctorys,

And othir syndry juperdys

That was in his dayis done,

In to the Bybyll yhe may sone

F. 80. b.

Fynd thaime wryttyn in his Buk,

Gyff yhe wyll all the story luk.

## CHAP. XIII.

*How how that the Cretens  
 Fawcht wyth the Attineens.*

**F**OURTENE hundyr yher beforne  
 And twelf full or God wes borne  
 A fell were ras, as Orose sayis,

And a dispetews in thai dayis 1210  
 Betwene thame duelland in Crete,  
 That is an yle in to the se,  
 And the folk off Athenys,  
 That in to Grece a gryt towne is ;  
 Thare slauchtyr hapnyd rycht cruelle  
 And bathe the partys fers and felle ;  
 Bot the Cretens faucht sa fast  
 Quhylle the Grekys at the last  
 Mast part in that batayle qwyte  
 Was tane, or slayne, or discumfyt. 1220  
 The gentyl-mennys sonnys thare  
 That ayrys to thare faderys ware  
 Thai tuk in to that were, but dowe,  
 And all thare eyne fyrst thai put owte.  
 A Mynotawre (quhethir that he  
 A felowne man or best sulde be,  
 I wyll noucht tel yow certanly),  
 All thai barnys halyly  
 Thai gert be delyveryd tyll,  
 For to be swellyid at hys wyll, 1230  
 And to be etyn. In that place thare  
 The Grekys thus reboityt ware.

The Laphytys and the Tessalyis  
 In Grece bayth thai landys lyis,  
 In that tyme oysyd gret traŵaille  
 Amang thame self in hard bataylle.  
 In tyll a buk that Palafat  
 Off hys wncertane ferlyis wrate :  
 He sayde the Laphytys trowyd hale,  
 And taulde als for a certane tayle, 1240  
 That the Tessalyis sulde be  
 Yppocentawrys in akyn gre ;

That is to say properly  
 Bath hors and man in a body.  
 Suppos that thai sik wenyng had,  
 Swylk a best wes nevyr made;  
 Bot for ay thai saw so thyk  
 Thare horsmen in to batayle pryk  
 Othir wenyng had thai nane,  
 Bot hors and man batht wes ane.

1250

## CHAP. XIV.

*The sall be this Chapitre se  
 What the gnyowtance schuld be.*

F. 31.

**O**VIDE tellys mystyly  
 In tyll his Methamorphosi,  
 That is the Buke off Changynge,  
 In tyll our propyr wndoyng,  
 For in it ar changys sere,  
 That ferlyfull ar for to here.  
 This Owyde sayis that Dedalus  
 Wes in his dedys merwalus.  
 Off Athenys he wes kyng  
 And mekyll had in governyng  
 First tyl lordschipe quhen he drewe  
 Hys newo in tyll ire he slewe,  
 And exylid for that caus wes he  
 Owte off Athenys in to Creté,  
 That is in to the Se ane yle,  
 Thare Mynois regnyd in that quhyle,  
 He Kyng that tyme wes off Creté,  
 And had a wyff callyd Phasyfé,

1260



Batht off fassowne and off face  
 Fourmyde fayre at full scho wace. 1270  
 As this Queyne apon a day  
 Hyr laykand in a medow lay,  
 A tawre, that is a bul, but wene,  
 Scho saw ner by hir on the grene  
 Gnyppand gyrs rycht gredyly;  
 Quhen scho beheld hym increly,  
 Hyr fleschly lust maid [hir] so ken  
 That wndyr hym scho walde have bene;  
 Scho pressyd to [pleysse] hym wyttht all slycht  
 Hyr brandysand in tyll his sycht 1280  
 And maid hyr oft wyttht hym to bowrde;  
 Bot that best off kynd sa lowrde  
 Wyst rycht noucht quhat scho wald meyne  
 Bot wend hyr bourd hade manans bene;  
 Swa ay as scho wald drawe hym nere,  
 Fra plas to place the bul walde stere.  
 Scho lufyt this best so straytly  
 That scho walde fayne have had copy  
 Off hym, gyff ony wys scho moucht  
 Bot kynd to that accordyt noucht. 1290  
 Quhyll that scho wes travalyde thus,  
 Scho come off case to Dedalus,  
 And schawyde tylle hym hyr malady,  
 And syne requeryd hym specyally  
 That he wald se for sum remede,  
 Or than, but dowt, scho were bot dede.  
 Off this request scho wes sa thra  
 That scho walde na wys pas hym fra,  
 Quhyll that he gave hys assent,  
 In tyll assyth off hyr talent. 1300  
 Than he hyr fourmyde in a kowe

Bot that is noucht yhit all to trowe,  
 And the bul quhylum he sawe that,  
 This Mynotawre apon hyr gat,  
 And quhen hyr tyme wes weryd owte  
 Off this bysyn best, but dowl,  
 Scho wes delywre: and quhen this  
 The kyng off Crete, Mynois,  
 Hade sene, in hart he wes full wa  
 That he was asschamyd swa; 1310  
 In tyll a stede he maid in hy  
 A manere place swa suddely,  
 And strately cloyd all abowte,  
 That quha wytth-in walde pres hym owte,  
 Than hym behuwyd to mak entre;  
 And quha wytth-out wytth-in walde be,  
 To be thare-owte ay hym behuwyde  
 Quhatkyn craft sua evyre he pruwde.  
 The Laberynt thai callyd that place,  
 The Mynotawre set in it was, 1320  
 And syne thai oysyd commonaly  
 To call it Domus Dedaly.  
 Dedalus quhen he saw this,  
 He was so rad for Mynois,  
 That off the land he walde have bene,  
 Gyff he couth ony way have sene;  
 Bot hym behuwyd oure a Se,  
 And schyppyn nane to that hade he.  
 Than this ilk Dedalus,  
 And his son Ycarius, 1330  
 Mad thame hally to the flycht;  
 Swa Dedalus than, wytth hys slycht,  
 For hym and his sone, maide twa  
 Feytheramys fayre thare flycht to ta.

In thai quhen clede wes Dedalus  
 And his sone Ycarius,  
 He bade his sone in to the flycht  
 Hald ewyn in tyll a rawndown rycht:  
 Noucht tyll hey, for dowl the ayre  
 Sulde melt away his fethrys fayre; 1340  
 Na to law, for dowl the flud  
 Sulde wesche away his fethrys gude.  
 Bot this Ycarius in his flycht  
 Made a cowrs so hey on hycht,  
 That hym behoŵyde on nede cum down,  
 Swa hapnyd hym in the Se to drown.  
 Be that ensawmpyll be thir ilk wers  
 Ware maid that I wyll yowe rehers,  
 (*Ycarii fati*  
*Memores estote parati,*  
*Jussa paterna pati,*  
*Medium tenere beati.*)

F. 82. Off the werd of Ycary,  
 Be ye ay thoughtfull and redy, 1350  
 To thole yhoure fadyr byddyng ay,  
 Haly men mesoure held all way.  
 The bul that this Dame Phasifé  
 Thus lufyd, wes in propyrté  
 Hyr awne stewart that by hyr lay,  
 And on hyr gat, in chambure play,  
 A barne that wes prywaly  
 Haldyn and norisyde tendyrly.  
 Gret slycht, as yhe herd, scho leryde  
 Hyr lordys ey wyttht that scho bleryde. 1360

## CHAP. XV.

*How Wersozes off Egipt kyng  
In sowth and north made gret steryng.*

**T**WELFF hundyr and thretty yhere befor  
And twa yhere or that God wes born,  
Wersozes that off Egypt kyng  
Bath sowth and north maid gret steryng,  
And set his diligence ay  
Batht thai arthys as thai lay,  
Be land partyd, or be sé,  
To ger thame bowe tyll his pousté,  
Or ellys he suld thame fast assayle  
Wytth felown were and hard bataylle. 1370  
Thare-off message he send in hy  
Tyll thame than duelland in Sythy,  
And bade that thai sulde tyll hym drawe,  
And oys his custome and his lawe,  
And becum in-deyde his men.  
To this message thai ansuerd then,  
And said thame thocht it fawklys thyng  
Tyll hym that wes a mychty kyng  
Agayne sa sympyll folk to rys,  
Or fande in were thame to supprys; 1380  
Sene werde off batayle is dwtows  
And tyll all partys peralows.  
Off this for tyll mak schort oure tayle,  
Thai mellayde sone in tyll batayle,  
Quhare the fycht wes fers and felle,  
On bath the partys rycht cruelle.

Bot Wersozes at the last  
 Dyscumfyt wes and fled rycht fast.  
 The Sytykys wencust that bataylle,  
 And tuk wp all thare apparaylle, 1390  
 That wes left in to that place  
 Quhare that batayll strykyne was,  
 And chasyde the Egyptys hastyly  
 On hors and fute dyspytuysly.  
 And thai, for radnes fleand fast,  
 Wan fra thare dawngere at the last.

F. 32. b.

The Sytykys than wytth thare poware  
 Had wastyd all that land off were.  
 Ne ware [the] Egyptys dykys depe  
 About thame drewe thare land to kepe. 1400

The Sytykys than wytth playne batayle  
 Maid throwcht Asy thare trawayle,  
 And wan mekyll off it off were,  
 That thai maid to thame tributere.  
 Fyftene yhere thare thai abade,  
 Bot sum tyme yit war thai hade,  
 Quhyll thaire wyffys made thame kende  
 Be the message that thai sende,  
 Bot gyff thai sped thame hame but let,  
 That othire suld thare barnys get, 1410  
 [And ly with thame in ful delite,  
 That thai mycht stanch thair appetit].

## CHAP. XVI.

*Now tellis the next Chapitere .  
 What the Amazones were.*

IN the menetye that this was,  
 Twa yhung men in tyll Sythy ras,  
 The tayne callid wes Plynyus,  
 The tothire Scolopetyus,  
 That be the lawys off the land  
 Mycht noucht for thare dedys stand,  
 Than the lordys wald thame ta,  
 And, be thare statutys, wald thame sla, 1420  
 Swa that off nede thame behuwyd  
 To be banyst and removid  
 Fra thare gud, thare kyn, thare kyth ;  
 Off yhung falowys thai gat thame wyth  
 Ane lychthewyddyd company,  
 And set thame hale wpone felony,  
 And maid in strayttys thare reset,  
 Wyttht all the stuff that thai mycht get,  
 And sum landys nere thame by  
 Thai gert [obey] to thare mastry, 1430  
 And mony landys thai destroyit,  
 Thare-off the folk were sare anoyid ;  
 Swa thai conspyryd pryvaly  
 Wyttht marcherys that lay nere thame by,  
 The quhilkis maid thame swylk a trayne,  
 That mony off thame sone had thai slayne.  
 [And] all the lawe that dowl swa drede,  
 That thai tyll strayttare heychtys fiede ;

Swa was skallyd all that rowt  
 That off the lawe wes had na dowl. 1440  
 Thare wyffys that in that cas wes dede  
 As wedowis wyll off a gud rede,  
 Movyd was in tyll gret ire,  
 In felny brynnand as a fyre,  
 To thaire cummarys thair main thai made  
 F. 88. Menande sayre thaire wedowhade ;  
 Than thai gadyryde thame all halle.  
 And made amang thame be consalle  
 On set purpos for to qwyte,  
 Wytth gret revengeans, that dyspyte 1450  
 Done tyll thare husbandys that ware slayn,  
 Set thai sulde de in to the payn.  
 On this thai set haille thare intent,  
 Bot thai kest ane impediment  
 Dowlows to fall in to swylyk cas,  
 Syne faynt off kynd all women was,  
 And mekyll scownerand to se blude,  
 Quhare-in as thai thair purpos stude  
 Thare hart in to the deyde suld faylle  
 And swa thai tyne sulde thare trawaylle ; 1460  
 And for thare full presumptioun  
 Thai sulde fall in confusiowne.  
 To this ilkane said thare intent,  
 And delyveryd wytth hale assent,  
 Bot on that poynt [of] thaire accord  
 I dar noucht tyll yhow now record,  
 For dowl that wemen wald me blame  
 Gyff that it twechys thare defame,  
 And call it myne autoryte,  
 Set it autentyk story be ; 1470  
 And als the sawmpyll is rycht felle,

The propyrté thareoff to telle.  
 Bot Oros, in his Fyrst Buke,  
 Gyff that yhe wyll the story luke,  
 The foure and twentyid chapytere,  
 Can tell yhowe thare-off the manere  
 Quhat evyre it wes, it thai begane  
 And held wpon it stowtly than,  
 And rasyde were and playne batayle;  
 And stoutly made thame tyll assayle 1480  
 The landys lyand thame about,  
 And maid thaim tyll thame wндыrlowt,  
 And slewe thare innymys ilkane  
 That thare husbandys before had slayne:  
 All thus off were thai wan the land:  
 And maid it tyll thame obeysand,  
 Bot sum men thai gert sauffyd be  
 In tyme to cule thare qualyte;  
 And in ane yle thai gert thame ga  
 Amang thaim na repayre to ma, 1490  
 Bot qwhat tyme at thaire appetyte,  
 Thame movyd in lust and in delyte,  
 That yle ay thai walde pas tylle  
 Thare fleschly lust for to fullfille;  
 And quhat barnys ware gottyn thare  
 Quhen thaire modyrys delyver ware  
 Off knaw barnys thai walde sla mony,  
 F. 32 b. The madynys thai norysyde tendyrly,  
 Bot away thai walde ger bryn  
 The rycht pape the fleyhs wytthtin 1500  
 Lessand noucht off it a crote  
 For dowl it sulde let thame off schot:  
 Thai war callyd Amazones.

Twa gret ladyis off thame wes



That betwene thame tuk the cure  
 Off howshalde and off were al-ure,  
 Tyme be tyme per cumpany,  
 Wyth thare cowrtys ay syndry,  
 As ordanyd wes betwene thame twa :

The tayne wes callyd Mesepia, 1510

The tothire Lampete was calde  
 Baytth thai ware in batayllis balde.

In Europe landys rycht mony  
 Thai wan, and mekyll off Asy ;  
 Thai byggyd a cyté callyd Smyrna,  
 Epheson thai maid alsua ;

Welth at wyll thai wan off were,  
 All Asy dowtyde thare powere.

Syne Lampite wyth hyr cumpany  
 Passyde hame agayne in tyll Sythy, 1520

And lefte behynd hyr Dame Maisepe,  
 Wytth hyr cowrt, the land to kepe.

The Asyanys ras hyr agayne,  
 And has hyr in tyll bataylle slayne.  
 Hyr douchtyre Synope, eftyr hyre dede,  
 Tuke wpe armys in hyr stede  
 That wurschype prowyd in mony dede,  
 And deyde syn in hyr madynhede.

Sik name ras off that reall route  
 That landys sere off thame had doute, 1530

And out off Grece be consalle wes  
 To werray thaim send Ercoles,  
 That chesyt wytth hym the wychtest men  
 In tyll all Grece that he couth ken,  
 And mony schyppys gret gert he  
 Wytth men and armys stuffyde be,  
 For perylows that were hym thought

And ille to purpos to be broucht,  
 With all thai yhit in playne batayle,  
 Appertly durst he noucht assayle ; 1540  
 Bot, on the nycht, all pryvaly  
 He slewe off thame a gret party  
 As he come on thaim wnpurwayde,  
 Wnwarnyst, and all wnarayid.  
 Twa systyrys had the guvernaylle  
 That tyme off the land all halle,  
 F. 34. Antyope and Orythya,  
 Thir ware the namys off tha twa,  
 And odyr systyrys twa had thai,  
 Noucht off swylk state the soyth to say ; 1550  
 Menalympe callyd wes ane,  
 Scho wytth Ercules wes tane,  
 And he delyveryde hyr all fre  
 Tyll hyr systyr Antiope,  
 And for hyr rawnsome tuk na mare  
 Than the armurys that scho bare.  
 The tothire systyr, Ypolytes,  
 Weddyde wyth Theseus wes ;  
 Neyst Ercules in all degre  
 The grettest off that ost wes ho. 1560  
 Thare Orythya wes dede,  
 Penthassale ras in hyr stede,  
 Hyr douchtyr and hyr ayre off ale  
 That tyll hyr suld off profyt fale.  
 This lady prowyd gret douchtynes ;  
 Quhen the Grekys assegeand wes  
 The town off Troy, wytth thare powere,  
 Thare wyth hyr ost scho come off were,  
 As in the story weill is kend.  
 Bot shortly nowe for to mak end ; 1570

Ane hundyr yhere thare powere stud,  
 And landys sere thaire mycht oure-yhude,  
 Westande hale wytth thaire powere,  
 And byggand quhar thare wyllys were.

## CHAP. XVII.

*The Assegis off Trope here  
 Next folowis in this Chapitere.*

**A** THOWSAND ane hundyr and foure score,  
 And twa yher fully gane before  
 Crystys Incarnatyoun,  
 Off Troy wes the destructyowne,  
 That the Grekys [fully] ten yhere  
 Assegeand war wytth thare powere. 1580  
 How that began and endyt wes  
 Homer trettis, and Dares.  
 And eftyr Troyis destructyowne  
 And the cyté castyn downe,  
 Eneas gert twelff schyppys be  
 Wytayllyde and layde to the sé.  
 He and hys fadyre, Anchyses,  
 Askaneus als, that his sone wes,  
 In thai twelf schyppys tuk the sé,  
 Wytth all thare gud and thaire menyhe, 1590  
 And saylland, happynynt in the ile  
 That be name callyde wes Syzile;  
 Thare that tyme dede wes Anchyses,  
 And in that ile enteryde wes.  
 And quhen Anchyses hapnyd thus,  
 Eneas and Askaneus,

On set purpos fermly,  
For tyll have bene in Ytaly,  
Wp to [the] tope thare sayllys drewe,  
And drawe on, as thame blastys blewe 1600  
And quhyle on Roume lay coftys owt,  
As thai war stad in stormys stout,  
And quhyll lay nere for tyll have sene  
Quhat land that thai had nerest bene,  
And at the last thai saland swa,  
Arywyt on fors in Affryca.  
Quhar than off Affric Dido, Quene  
Fra that scho had Eneas sene,  
Resawyd hym wytth gret honoure,  
And lufyd hym stratly paramoure, 1610  
And gert all hyr rywawte  
Tyll hym and his obeysand be.  
Thare sojournand a quhille he bade,  
Quhare alkyn welth at wylle he hade.  
Bot his yharnyng halyly  
Stude tyll have bene in Ytaly;  
Tharefore he schyppys layd to sé,  
And waytyd wynd and made entré,  
And tuk wpe sayle and helde thare trade,  
In Tybyr quhyll thai strekyn hade; 1620  
Quhare, as Eneas slepand lay  
Apon a nycht in hys galay,  
A woce he herd that bad hym pas  
Tyll Ewandire that that tyme was  
Kyng rygnand in sevyn hyllys by,  
Quhare Rome is set now werraly,  
And bad he sulde mak suppowale  
Tyll this Ewandire, that batayle  
Gaue to kyng Latyn ythandly

For the kynryk off Ytaly. 1630

Eftyr all that hys sulde be

Wpon that purpos passyde he  
 Tyll this Ewandire wytht his mycht,  
 And faucht wytht Latyn in tyll fycht,  
 And Turnus in that fycht has slayne  
 That kyng wes that tyme off Tuskayne,  
 And mawch wes to this kyng Latyn,  
 And weddyd hys douchtyr Dame Lavyne;  
 And for that caus to this bataylle  
 This Turnus come in suppowaylle 1640

Off Latyn kyng, and slew Pallas,  
 That off Ewandire sone than was;  
 And throuch Eneas syne was he  
 Slayne off fors in that mellé.

F. 35.

Eneas weddyd syne Lavyne,  
 The douchtyr off this kyng Latyne;  
 And quhen that Latyne kyng wes dede,  
 He succedede in hys stede,  
 As kyng rygnand yherys thre;  
 And eftyr hym, quhen dede wes he, 1650  
 Hys sone Askaneus tuk all hale  
 Off Ytaly the governayle,

And byggyd thare a gret cyté,  
 And Albane gert it callyd be;  
 And aughtene wyntyr rygnand was  
 Eftyr his fadyre Eneas;  
 For owt off Troy wytht hym come he,  
 Gottyn and borne in that contré.  
 Hys sone callid wes Sylvius,  
 The quhilk wes fadyr to Bruttus, 1660  
 That this land fra geawndys wan,  
 And eftyr hym wes callyd Brytan.

Off Troy quhen that Eneas  
Buskyd hym wytht schype to pas,  
Anthenor and his menyhe  
Wyth thare nawyn tuk the sé,  
And arywyde by Pannony  
That marchys nere tyll Wngary,  
Off Wenes he maid the gret towne  
That yhit is realle off renowne, 1670  
And a port off the mekyll sé,  
Quhare that pylgrymys mais entre  
That to Jerusalem walde fayre  
The sepulkyr to wysyde thare.  
Off this Anthenor come syne,  
Descendand ewyn down be lyne,  
Francus off sa reale fame  
That Frawns off hym yhit hawys the name.  
Thus thai come fyrst, halyly,  
All off the gret towne off Troy, 1680  
That Ytaly all occupyid,  
And Frawns and Brytane inhabyid,  
And othir mony landys sere  
That I leve nowe to rekyn here.

[Explicit Liber Secundus.]



**THE THRYDE BUKE**  
**OF THE**  
**ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL**  
**OF SCOTLAND.**





THE THRYDE BUKE  
OF THE  
ORYGYNALE CRÖNYKIL  
OF SCOTLAND.

---

The Proloug off the Thryde Buke  
In this next Chaptere yhe sall luke.

MOYSES, that in tyll his dayis  
Broucht tyll the Jowys thare wryttyn Lawys,  
Gave thame in byddyng oppynly  
Thus wryttyn in Dewteronomii,  
Off the Bybyl the fyfte Buke  
Fra the begynnyng, quha wyll thame luke.  
“ *Memento dierum*, that leve yow noucht,  
*Antiquorum*, bot drawe to thought  
Ilké generatyowne,  
And in thare successyowne :  
Ask at thi fadyre, quhat at fell,  
And at thine eldrys, quhat thai can telle.”  
The sentence off this autoryte  
Suld move men to besy be,  
Thare statis to kene Orygynalle,  
And thame to treyt Memoryalle,  
Batht off thare eldrys and thaire dayis,  
As in thire wers, thus Moyses sayis ;

F. 35. b.

*(Memento dierum antiquorum, cogita generationes singulas:*

*Interroga patrem tuum, et annuntiabit tibi;  
maiores tuos, et dicent tibi, etc.)*

Oure eldrys we sulde folowe off det,	
That thaire tyme in wertu set :	20
Off thame, that lyvyd wtytyously,	
Carpe we bot lytyll, and that warly.	
The dayis sulde be set for terme	
A certane purpos for tyll afferme :	
Swa stablyst have I my delyte	
<i>Consequenter</i> now to dyt	
Wytht delytabyll incydens,	
And in plesand conveniens,	
The tyme that Brutus wan this Ile,	
And callyd it Brytane in that quhile ;	30
And the dywysiownys off it, that he	
Made syne to hys sonnys thre.	
Swa furth drywand my purpos	
Be syndry storyis syne to clos	
In it that tyme, as I can se,	
That made off Rome wes the cyté.	
This in fourme to sped and hast	
The wertu off the Haly Gast	
Be prayere off the Madyn fre	
I call devotly to helpe me.	40

**Explicit Prologus.**

**The Chapteris off the Thryde Buke.**

- i. **O**FF the Jwgis off Israelle.
- ii. Off Sampson and hys wychtnes.
- iii. Quhen Brutus come in Brettane.
- iiii. Off a Genealogy.
- v. Off Sardanapillus.
- vi. Off the successyowne off Pers.
- vii. Off a Terand that dyde felny.
- viii. Off Olympyas.
- ix. Off the Kyngys Stane off Scotland.
- x. Off Symon Brek and his Lynage.

## CHAP. I.

Off the Jwgis off Israelle  
This next Chapitere schall telle.

**Q**WHEN the assege off Troy felle  
 Jwgs ras in Israelle,  
 And off the pepyll chosyne was  
 Duk and chyftane than Judas.  
 The lorde off Bezeke than was tane,  
 And off hys fyngrys, everilkane,  
 And off all his tays wytth  
 The utmast endys be the lyth  
 Qwyt was strekyn off; than he  
 Sayde, "This, I trowe nowe done to me 10  
 Be Goddys wyll, for quhylum I  
 Off Kyngys reale had sevynty  
 Wndyrneth my burddys set,  
 Sekand crummys for tyll ete,  
 Mankynd all on lyk manere,  
 As now my cas is happynynd here;  
 Tharfore off Goddys wyll, I trowe,  
 Is all done that I suffyr nowe."  
 The kyng off Moab, than Eglon,  
 Had wndyr hym in subjection 20  
 The folk off Israell aughtene yhere,  
 Quhyll Ayot [Ehud] begowth to stere;  
 The quhilk swa agyle wes in fycht  
 That batht the left hand and the ryght  
 He ewynlike oysyde, quhen that he

In were wes stade, or in mellé;  
And for that oys than gert he ma  
A scharpe suerd wytht edgys twa;  
Syne fra the folk off Israelle thare  
He presendys and gret gyftys bare 30  
Tyll this Eglon that tyme kyng,  
That Moab had in governyng;  
All othir off dreyth than gert he drawe  
Hys charge, quhill that he suld schawe  
That ilk suerd, that tyme had he,  
On his rycht syde in prewate  
Wndyr his gown; and syn onone  
He take hys rayk to this Eglon,  
And sayd [at] it war his wyll  
A worde he had to say hym tyll. 40  
Off his cheare quharein he sat,  
This kyng Eglon ras wp wytht that.  
Than Ayot tyt owt smertly  
Hys suerd that he bare prewaly,  
And put it in his wame sa fast  
Quhill hylte and plumet bath in past  
And leyffyt it stekand in his belch,  
The carle was fat as ony selch,  
Bath gore and cres rane tyll his hand  
That wytht hys suerd was hym stykand. 50  
His famyle thare, wytht-owtyn dout,  
That was the chambure than wytht out  
Wende the kyng had syttand bene  
On the priwé, bot syne, but wene,  
Fra thai had bade lang tyme wytht out  
Thai ware in to [the] fellare dout.  
Thare eftyr sone a key thai gat  
And opynynt the chambure dowre with that,

In thai come, and slayne thai fand  
 Thare Kyng apone the flure thare lyand. 60  
 All thus fra thai fand hym dede  
 Dyspayryd thai ware off gud remede ;  
 But mare byddyng than tuk thai  
 Tyll Jordane on the nerest way.

In this mene tyme prewaly  
 Ayot chapye, and in hy  
 Fled fast quhill he passyd wele  
 All the placys ilk[a] delle  
 That thare ydolys than hade  
 And his incummyng fyrst he made. 70  
 Off Israell than the pepyll alle  
 He gert in hy befor hym calle ;  
 And wytth thame passyd till Jordane.  
 All the furdys everilkane  
 Off that wattyr he kepyde swa,  
 That tene thousand full and ma  
 Off the Moabytys thare  
 Slayne about that wattyr ware.

Sangare, as the Bybyll sayis, 80  
 Slw wytth a cultyre in thai dayis  
 Off the Phylysteis wycht  
 Sex hundyr men throucht fors in fycht.  
 Barak als and Delbora  
 Than made that chas on Sysara,  
 Quhen that Jael hym resawye  
 In tyll hyr tent and hym dyssaŵye ;  
 He askyt drynk off wattyr clere  
 To gyff hym, gyve hyr wyllis were,  
 For he was for runnyne hate,  
 And all-owr drawkyde wete in swat. 90  
 Swet mylk than scho broucht hym tylle,

And bade [him] thareoff drynk his fylle,  
 And cōweryd syne, and gert hym ly  
 Wndyr a tapyte prewaly,  
 And sayde scho sulde his wache be,  
 And nane suld wyt thare ware he.  
 Wyttht that to the dure in hy,  
 Scho tuk hyr rayk ryght hastyly,  
 And fand owth that on the walle  
 Ane hamyr and ane nayll wyttht all,  
 And syne scho waytyd and tuk kepe,  
 Quhill he was rowtanā fast on slepe,  
 The nayle than on his hēwyde scho set,  
 And strake on fast wyttht that malyhet,  
 Dryfand down ryght throucht his hēwyde,  
 Swa Sysara the lyff he lēwyde.

100

F. 37.

Off the folk off Israelle than  
 Gedeon agayne Madian  
 Chesyd thre hundyre men that were  
 Lapand wattere as hundys here,  
 And lete all the lave ga by  
 That he saw drynkand than kyndly ;  
 And wyttht thai thre hundyr quite  
 This Madian than wes discumfyte.

110

Jopté than alsua Galaadyte  
 Aʷowyt gyff he discumfyte  
 Amon, that he sulde, but let,  
 Off his hous quhat evyr he mete  
 Nest eftyrhend his w̃yctory  
 Devotly to God sacryfy.  
 Swa hapnyd that hys douchtyr yhyng,  
 Wyttht tympanys and wyttht swet syngyng,  
 Met hyr fadyr, this Jopté,  
 Quhen cumyn fra that fycht wes he ;

120



Than in hart set he wes wa,  
 Yhit syne he wes oblisyd swa  
 Hys sacryfice set hym to do,  
 And to that assentyd scho ;  
 Bot at scho mycht murnand be  
 Twa moneth hyr wýrgynyte ; 130  
 To that leve he gave hyr sone,  
 And scho thare eftyre, quhen that wes done,  
 Tyll hyr fadyr come agayne,  
 And he tyll sacryfice has hyr slayne.

## CHAP. II.

*The next Chapter schall onone  
 Tell the myghtnes off Sampson.*

**T**HAR eftyr wes Sampson off renowne  
 And slw the quhelpe off a lyowne,  
 As he wytth his faddyr yhed,  
 And wytth his modyr in yhouthede,  
 Wytth a wyff to maryde be  
 All, but thare wyttyng, that dyde he. 140  
 Swa [thar]leftyre quhen he was  
 Weddyd wyth that wyff, off cas,  
 He hapnyde to cum to that stede,  
 Quhare that he [left] the lyowne dede,  
 A gret swarme off beys thare  
 Wele hyvyd wyth-in the chaftys ware :  
 Off that best, than gredyly  
 He tuke and ete off that huny :  
 Tyll his fadyre syne he yhede,  
 And tyll his mudyр full gud spede, 150

F. 37. b.

And gert thame off that huny ete.  
 Eftyr that syne at the mete  
 Quhare off his wyff the frendys alle  
 Assemblyt wes at that bridalle,  
 That his fadyr till hym made,  
 As in that land thai custum hade,  
 And off his wyffys kyn thretty,  
 The nobylest in that cumpany,  
 Assygnyd till hym wes to be,  
 As feris in all honeste ; 160  
 Than to that thretty at the mete,  
 As thai ware in thaire greys sete,  
 He sayd, gyff thai walde wndo  
 A rydyll that he wald schaw thame to,  
 Wytth-in sevyn dayis off that brydale  
 Wyth kyrtylis thretty garmentys hale  
 He suld gyve thame to thare mede,  
 And falyhyde that, thai sulde, but drede,  
 Swylk thretty garmentys tyll hym pay ;  
 To this than assentyde thai, 170  
 And bade that he suld say thaim tyll  
 Quhat ewyr war lykand tyll his wylle.  
 " Off hym that ete the mete come owt,  
 And swetnes off the stark and stoute,"  
 Sampson sayid, and syne thai  
 Fra this wes sayd held on thare way,  
 And studyand on this rydyll were,  
 Quhyll thare terme wes cummyn nere,  
 And [qwhen] they sawe be nakyn slycht  
 That [this] rydyll rede thai mycht ; 108  
 All thai thretty come on-one  
 Tyll the wyff off this Sampsone,  
 And bad scho suld, on ony wys,

Fleche hyr lord wytth swylk quentys,  
 Quhyll that he sulde all the dout  
 Off that rydyll tell hyr owt,  
 And to thame scho sulde telle it hale,  
 Swa that thai ran noucht in tynsalle,  
 Or ellys thai sulde hyr hous bryn,  
 And all that ewyre thai fand thare in, 190  
 For thai sayde wytth hale assent,  
 Gyff thai ware in tyll that intent,  
 Tyll fest callyd, that thai sulde be  
 Dyspoylyt, it war wnhoneste.  
 This wyff swa on hyr husband yhede,  
 That hym behowyd apon nede  
 Tell hyr all the suthfastnes,  
 Set lang tyme that he gruchand wes,  
 Hym excusyde be that skylle  
 That it come nevyr in his wyll 200  
 Tyll his fadyr that to say,  
 Na tyll his mudyr to that day;  
 Tyll his wyff yhit, nevertheles,  
 He tauld all how it hapnyde wes.  
 Off the lyown, that he lewyde  
 Slayne, and fand syne in his hevyde  
 A byk off beys, and gret copy  
 In it he fand off suet huny.  
 To thai thretty than, but bade,  
 Scho tauld quhat wyttyng that scho hade: 210  
 Swa apon the sewynde day,  
 As syttand at the mete war thai,  
 And wes examynyt throwch Sampson,  
 Thai ansueryd all and sayd onone,  
 "Quhat than the lyowne is starkare,  
 And quhat than huny is suettare?"

Wyttht that Sampson wyst rycht wele  
He wes dessayvyde ilk[a] deylye,  
He sayd, " Na had yhoure tylch bene wrocht  
Wyttht my qwy, yhit had yhe noucht        220  
Fundyn my propositiounne."

Fra thine he passyd tyll Askaloune,  
And thretty men that he fand thare  
Ryche robys on thame bare,  
He slw all, and thare robys fyne  
He gave to thai thretty syne  
That he heycht tyll warysowne  
Sen thai assolyeit his questyowne.  
Bot tyll his wyff he kest sik leth  
That thai departyd all in wreth,        230  
And wes dyspytwys and fellowne  
Tyll hyr and all hyr natyown,  
And on sere wys [he] thame anoyid,  
And all thare cornys hale he stroyid.  
For in his wayth sone eftyr that  
Thre hundyr foxis qwyk he gat,  
And knyt tyll all thare taylis schyre  
Ane hat cole off brynand fyre,  
And set thame in thare flattis gret,  
Than growand grene off wyne and quheyt ;        240  
And thai wyld bestys than  
All wode throucht thai feldys rane,  
Wyttht thai blesys, here and thare,  
Quhyll brynt wp all thare cornys ware  
Than the Phylisteis hale  
[That] tholyt that scaytht and that tynsalle  
Movid in tyll brynand ire  
Sampsonys hous set in tyll fyre ;  
His wyff and hyr syre at anys

Thai gert bryn wp in to thai wanya. 250

Than Sampson that [na] strenthys had  
 In tyll a cove his duellyng mad,  
 And the Phylisteis off were  
 Sone assemblyt thare powere,  
 And in the land off Juda thai  
 Come wyth thare ost, and in it lay  
 And tuk gret prayis to thare mete,  
 And dyde in tyll it schathis grete,  
 And quhen the barnage off Juda  
 Arresownyde thame quhy [thai] dide sua, 260

Thai said [at] thai come onone  
 To bynd and led away Sampson,  
 And to quyt hym lyl for lal.

Off Juda than the barnage alle  
 Thai oblysyd errare [him] to ta,  
 Or thai sulde be anoyid swa.

F. 38. b.

Than the Phylisteis all hale  
 Removyde off Juda thaire batayle.  
 Thre thousand wycht men off Juda  
 Than passyd wytth rapys new to ta, 270  
 And for tyll bynd this Sampson fast.

Al thus as thai togyddyr past,  
 Sampson met thame on the way  
 And askyd quethir thare gat lay,  
 And thare ansuere wes that he  
 Sulde bundyn, and syne yholdyne be  
 Tyll his fays; [for] thai ware  
 For his caus than anoyid sare;  
 And than that thai sulde noucht hym sla,  
 He yhald hym tyll thame off Juda. 280

Thare wes he tayne and bundyn fast,  
 And wytth hym on thaire way thai past,

And the Phylisteis, quhen that  
 He wes tane full wyttyng gat,  
 Bolenyt all wytht brage and bost,  
 Agayne hym come wytht a gret ost ;  
 Bot Sampson, quhen he sawe thame nere  
 Comand all on that manere,  
 Wytht a tyt thare [he] brak alle  
 Thai rapys in tyll pecys smalle, 290  
 And gat a chek bane off ane ass,  
 That in the gat thare lyand wes,  
 And fra he gat that in his grype  
 He leyt abowt hym, quhype for quhype,  
 Quhyll off the Phylisteis wycht  
 A thousand men to ded was dycht  
 Wytht that cheke bane off ane ass ;  
 And Sampsons thare forfowchtyng was,  
 Sa hate [and] thyrsty nere that he  
 Was in to poynt to peryst be ; 300  
 Tyll God his prayer he mad than,  
 Syne throucht Hys grace he wychtnes wan,  
 Quhare throucht his fays he put to dede,  
 As than wes sene in to that stede,  
 He walde, gyve His wyllis were,  
 Grant hym his fill off wattyr clere  
 Quhare wyth he mycht thare slok his thyrst.  
 Rycht hastyly than begouth to bryst  
 Owt off a [tuythe] off that chek bane  
 Wattyr clere in to gret wane, 310  
 Thareoff than he drank his fylle ;  
 And fra thyne he passyd tyll  
 The gret cyté off Gaza,  
 Thare in quiet a quhyll to ta.  
 Thare tyll a woman yhung and fare

- He oysyd mekyll his repayre ;  
 And quhen the Phylisteis, but lete,  
 Wyst he had thare his resset,  
 Thai enbussyd thame ner by  
 F. 89. That womanys hous, all prewaly, 320  
 And set thare wachys for to se  
 Quhen wnarayid all was he,  
 That swa thai mycht hym best supprys ;  
 And he, wnwarnyd off thare spyis,  
 Wyttht that woman yhed to bede,  
 As he noucht off that buschement drede.  
 Bot that nycht or it wes day  
 Thare was made hym so hard assay,  
 Quhyll to the yhattis off fors he past  
 That lokyt wer and barryd fast, 330  
 And thare he made than rak for rak  
 Quhyll conyhe and rabet bath he brak,  
 And ruschyde wp thai yhattis thare,  
 And on hys schuldrys wp thame bare  
 To the hey hyll outtht Ebron ;  
 All thus eschapyd than Sampson.  
 Syne oysyd he repayre to ma  
 Tyll a queyne callyd Dalyda,  
 And scho amang thare preweteis  
 Counsaylyde throwcht the Phylisteis, 340  
 In hyr flethyng thraly mowye  
 And askyt oft, as he hyr lufyde,  
 Quhar in hys fors stud and hys pyth,  
 And quhat that he ware bundyn wyth  
 Sa fast mycht [hald] than that he  
 Mycht at his fays lykyng be.  
 Quhen that he sawe thare that he wes  
 Sa thraly, through hyr wantownes,

Infesteyde than that hym behuwyde  
 Mak hyr ansuere he contruwyde 350  
 A fenyheyd ansuer, and he sayde,  
 " Wyttht sewyn corddys newe layde  
 Off hert cynownys noucht all dry,  
 But a party, fast ware I  
 Bundyn, doutles I war than  
 Bot as ane othire comoune man."  
 Quhen the Phylisteis herd that,  
 In hy thai tha corddys gat,  
 And scho thame helde, and tuk gud kepe  
 Tyll he was sadly fallyn on slepe, 360  
 And wyttht ane hank than bath his handys,  
 Fast scho festynyde wyttht thai bandys,  
 And cryit syne lowde, wyttht a schowt,  
 " Now all thi fays ar thé abowt."  
 Sampson off his slepe wyttht that  
 He stert wp, and [on] solys gat,  
 And wyttht a rug thai rapys all  
 He crakyde in to pecys smalle.  
 Quhen this queyne all this had sene,  
 Scho mulyd fast, and maid hir tene, 370  
 And off hyr werdys wykylt plenyheyde,  
 For in tyll falshede luffe he fenyheyde  
 Tyll hyr that, for his luffe all hale,  
 Had put hyr body to tynsale.

F. 29. b.

Bot in thare flechyng syne agayne,  
 Quhen Dalyda made hyr to frayne  
 Off the mater off his pyth,  
 And off hys wndoyng, wyth  
 That hym behuwyd on nede to ma  
 Ansuer tyll hyr, he sayd; " Quha 380  
 Walde bynd hym wyth twa bandys grene



And new, that nevyr in werk had bene,  
 He sulde be na wychtare than  
 Than anothir comounne man."

Than wytth thai rapys scho hym band  
 Fast, in his slepe, bath fute and hand,  
 And wyth a schout scho cryid on-one  
 "Thi fays are on thé nowe, Sampsonsone."

Thare in his walknyng, wytth a brayde  
 [Than thai] twa rapys newe layde

390

He brak, and gat wpon his fete.  
 Wytth that scho brystyd out off grete,  
 And menyd hyr wykyde werdys sare  
 That broucht and band hyr in that care,  
 That scho couth nevyre leve Sampson  
 To be made lady off Sydon.

It is suet lykyng and na payne  
 To luffe and [to] be lufyt agayne;  
 But for luff to yheld fenyhyng,

It is to lele hart a throwyng.

400

Swylk [is the werde] off Dalyda,  
 That changyd, scho sayd, welle for wa,  
 Off hart and body, kyn and kyth,  
 And off all warldys welth thare wyth,  
 For Sampsonsone scho had mad chaynge,  
 And he tyll hyr was alway strange,  
 And had hyr in tyll myslewýng,  
 That for lele luffe he yhald fenyhyng.

Yhit thus murnand, nevertheles,

Scho fraynyde fast off his wychtnes

410

Quhar in it stude, and how that he

Mycht lychtlyest our-cummyn be.

Than he sayde, "Gyff scho wald bynd

Sevyn harys off his hewýd behynd

Wytht a threde tyll a spykyn,  
 And in the erde fast styk it syne ;  
 Than ware he febyll and off na pyth,  
 Na had noucht for tyll helpe hym wyth,"  
 That the thryd tyme scho assayid,  
 And off his slepe syne hym affrayid, 420  
 And he tyt wp that nayle wyth pyth,  
 And left bayth hare and threde thare wyth.

Quhen scho saw hyr the thryd tyme swa  
 Dyssavyde, than scho mad gret wa,  
 That scho lyk wes tyll have bene dede  
 All thus dyspayrid off remede.  
 Than Sampson, movid in peté,  
 Tauld hyr, all in prewaté,  
 That gyve sevyen harys off his hewyde  
 War schawyn off, nane off thame lewyde, 430  
 He war off pyth and wychtnes than  
 Bot as ane othir commoun man.

F. 40.

And quhen his hevid was lyand  
 Apon hyr skyrt, and he slepand,  
 Scho gert slely a barbare  
 Off hys hevyd schawe all the hare,  
 And the Phylisteis in hy  
 Scho gert cum on him suddanly.  
 Thai tuk hym and his eyne put owte,  
 And thare eftyr, wytht-owtyn dowt, 440  
 Thai kyst hym in a presowne.  
 Sa lang he lay in that dungeowne  
 Quhill on his hevid the hare grewe,  
 And his pyth worthyde fresche and newe.

The Phylysteis on thare wys  
 Tyll Dagone mad thare sacryfice  
 Apon a day, wyth gamyn and gle,

Wyttht myrtht, and wyttht solempnyté,  
 And in thare halle, as thai were set,  
 That day to-gyddyr at thare mete, 450  
 A boy thai gert [gang] onone  
 To bryng amang [tham] in Sampson,  
 That he mycht thare bowrdoure be,  
 In ekyng off thare gamyn and gle.  
 And quhen he was amang thame alle  
 Led in to that mekyll halle,  
 The boy that hym kepyd thare  
 He requiryt wyth fayre prayare  
 To thole hym, bot a lytill space,  
 Syne he for standyn wery was, 460  
 Tyll a pyllare leyne hym thare,  
 Quhill that he refresched ware ;  
 Thare the boy wyth-outyn lete  
 Sampson at a pyllare sete,  
 And [he] prayid to God off mycht  
 That, for the tynsalle off his sycht,  
 A rewengeans he mycht wyn  
 Off all his fays that war thare in.  
 About twa pyllarys than, but let,  
 At that hows was hale on sete, 470  
 He kest hys armys hastyly,  
 And ruggyt at thame dogytly,  
 And sayd, " My lyff in perale ga  
 Wyttht the Phylysteis," and swa  
 The post he tyt tyll hym sa fast  
 Quhyll downe the hous [come] at the last,  
 And sa smoryd all at wes thar in,  
 Man and wyff, bath mare and myn.  
 Swa slwe he ma in his deyng  
 Than all that he slwe in fychtyng. 480

In Israell than wes na kyng  
Bot ilkane wroucht [at] thaire lykyng.

## CHAP. III.

The next Chapitere folowand  
Schall tell quhen Brutus wan this lande.

F. 40. b.

SERE Dardane Lord wes off Frygy,  
That now men callis all Turkey :  
He, as the story tellys wa,  
Had a sone callid Erictonus,  
Off quham Troyus, that Troy made,  
And off hym that name it hade :  
He gat Ylus, that Ylion  
Fwndyt, and gat Leamydon,  
That [Priame] gat, and Anchises  
That Eneas fadyr wes :  
And this [Priame] nemmyde befor,  
That fadyr wes to gud Hector,  
That was sa wycht and sa worthy,  
That nevyr yhit na chevalry  
Héar yhed than his persowne,  
Tharfor yhit lestys hys renowne.

490

Eneas sone Askaneus  
Had a sone callyd Silvius,  
That Brut[us] gat, quham off beforne  
Wes devynynd, or he wes borne,  
That off gret wurschype [he] suld be,  
And rys to state and dignyte ;  
Bot he suld fadyr and mudyr sla.  
And off cas it fell rycht sua :

500

For his mudyr at hys beryng  
 Deyd ; [and] quhen that he wes yhing  
 Off fyftene yhere eld off case  
 Slwe his fadyr at the wanlas ; 510  
 And tharefor owt off that cuntré  
 Fra kyth and kyne wes flemyd he.  
 Quhen that this Brutus flemyd was,  
 Furth toward Grece the way he tays,  
 Quhar mony off Troy a wele lang quhille  
 Had bene in thryldome and exyle :  
 Fra thai gat wyttyng thare, that he  
 Be leneage was off thare cuntré,  
 Thai maid hym thare duk and ledare ;  
 And fra he wyst welle howe thai ware 520  
 Demaynyd into foule thrildome,  
 He movyde wes for thar fredome.  
 Swa hapnyde hym to ta the Kyng  
 And anyd for hys rawnsownyng  
 For to gyff that tyme hym tyll  
 Schyppys and wyttaylle till his wylle,  
 And large ryches tyll his men ;  
 And syne his dowchtyr Inogen  
 He gave hym als to be hys wywe.  
 He buskyt hym thare eft belyve, 530  
 And to the Sé has tane his way,  
 Quhare that he trawalyde mony day  
 In wayth and were and in bargane  
 F. 41. Quhyll that he werownyd haly Spayne.  
 Syne, eftyr syndry gret mellé,  
 By Poytere in tyll Frans [come] he.  
 And in the tyme yhe herde me telle  
 Than Sampson ras in Ysraelle.  
 In tyll Albyone belywe

He come, quhare nowthire man na wywe 540

To sauff geawntis thare he fand ;

Tyll hym he sesyd all that land,

And realle was, and [of] gud fame,

And callyd that land eftyr his name,

And it inhabytyd wytth his men,

And gat wpon this Inogen

A sone Locryne, and othir twa,

Camber and Albanach war tha.

The eldest Locryne Ingland aucht,

Camber Walys, syne Albanacht 550

Off Scotland had the senyhoury.

Than Yngland callyd wes Locry ;

And Camber, Cambry, that Wallys auch

Gert call it ; and syne Albanach

Gert Albany call that land,

That now callyd is Scotland.

Thus Brute Brettane gert partyd be

Amang thir forsaid barnys thre,

And byggyd in his land a towne,

Yhit realle [and] off gret renowne, 560

And Trynovant than gert he

Call the name off that cyté,

New Troy, that is to say,

Syne quhen this Brute wes dede away,

Wytth othir namys sere, I wys,

Wes callyd, and now Londyn is.

All thus quhen thir brethir thre

Had stedede thame in thare cuntré,

And in tyll quiete and in pes

Ilkane in his regnand wes, 570

Sodanly come oure the se

Off Hennygawys a gret menyhe :

Be naŵyne in tyll Albany  
 Arrywyde all that cumpany,  
 And stoutly moŵyd were, and faucht,  
 And slwe off Scotland Albanacht,  
 And chasyde his men halyly,  
 Tyll Locryne Lord than off Locry,  
 That Yngland wes callyd syne,  
 Hys ost than gadyryt this Locryne, 580  
 And Cambere wytht the Welsche hale  
 Come to mak hym suppowale  
 And wytht the Henygawys thai faucht,  
 That slwe the Kyng Albanacht;  
 Thai met the wattyр off Humbere nere;  
 Thare, wyth the kyng and his powere,  
 Thai mellayd sone, and faucht rycht fast,  
 Quhyll thai hym wencust at the last;  
 And on that Kyng thai maid sic chas,  
 Quhyll in that flude he drownyd was. 590  
 Hys land callid was Hunia;  
 Hunys his men [was] callyd alsua:  
 And quhar sa mony drownyd were,  
 The wattyр callid was Humbere.

F. 41. b.

Quhen Albanactus on this wys  
 Was slayne, as yhe me herd dewys,  
 Scotland was dyssaŵarra left,  
 And wast nere lyand lang thare eft,  
 Quhyll Scottis and the Peychtis were  
 In tyll it cummyn, as yhe sall here 600  
 In tyll this Tretis here eftyre sone,  
 Quhen all the laŵe tyll it is done.

This Locryne had a sone, but ma,  
 Madaine, and he had sonnys twa  
 Memprys and Malyne; bot Memprys

Smyttyd wes wytth mony wys ;  
 Hys brothyr he slwe, and syn all tha,  
 That he couth trow that wald thaim ma  
 For tyll succede tyll hym as kyng.  
 It happynyde syne at a huntynge 610  
 Wytth wolwys hym to weryde be ;  
 Swa endyt his iniquité.

His sone Ebrawce in hys stede  
 Regnyd, quhen that he wes dede ;  
 He fwndyd Yhork that gret cyté,  
 And Kayrbroye it callyd he.  
 He byggyd Edynburgh wytth alle,  
 And gert thaim Allynclowde it calle  
 The Maydyn Castell, in sum plas  
 The Sorowfull [Hill] it callyd was. 620

Off Bruttus lyneage quha wyll here  
 He luke the Tretis off Barbere  
 Mad in tyll a Genealogy  
 Rycht wele, and mare perfytylly  
 Than I can on ony wys  
 Wytth all my wyt to yowe dewys.

Bot now, forthare or I pas,  
 I wyll tell how that Eneas  
 Fra that he slwe the Kyng Latyne,  
 Weddyd hys dowchtyr dam Lawyne, 630  
 And gat wpon hyr Postumus,  
 That wes callyd alsua Silvius ;  
 He was callyd Postume [for] beforne,  
 Hys faddyr deyde or he wes borne ;  
 Silvius allsua callyd wes he,  
 That off the wode has propyrte,  
 For in the wode he fostyryde was :  
 Hys sone was callyd Eneas ;



He regnyd thretty yhere and ane,  
 Quhen all his fadyr tyme wes gane, 640  
 And fyfty yhere he regnyd syne.  
 Eneas sone was callyd Latyne.

Gad that tyme and Natan  
 Prophetis ware contemporan  
 Tyll Daŵy Kyng off Israell.  
 In that tyme Cartage, I herd telle,  
 Dydo fyrst gert formyd be,  
 And wallyd welle that gryte cyté;  
 Hyr gudame lufyde Eneas;  
 Off Affryk hale scho Lady was. 650

Heyr the Thryd Elde now tayis end,  
 That, as the Ebrewy mays ws kende,  
 Contenys nyne hundyr yhere  
 And twa, gyff all wele rekynynd were;  
 Bot the Sevynty clerkis wys  
 Sayis twa les, be thaire storys.  
 All this tyme Noe his spate  
 Thaire oys was for to set thaire date,  
 As now oure oys is in lettrys,  
 Monumentis, or than chartrys, 660  
 To rekyn fra the byrth off God,  
 As yheris hapnys, ewyn or od.

## CHAP. IV.

Or I forthyr now procede,  
 Off the Romanys I will rede.

**L**ATYNE kyng off Ytaly,  
 Eftyre the dede off Sanct Daŵy,

Gat Alba Sylvius onone,  
 In to the tyme off Salamon :  
 In Rome he regnyd fourty yhere.  
 All thir that thus rekynyde were  
 Discendand fra Postumus,  
 To surname wes callyd Sylvius. 670  
 Athis, that callyd wes Egyptus,  
 And had till surname Silvius,  
 In Rome foure and twenty yhere  
 Regnyd, quhen devysyt were  
 Off Israel the kynrykys and Juda ;  
 Jeroboam had ane off tha :  
 He kyng wes, and in hys dayis  
 That scisim fel, as the story sayis ;  
 Kyng off Israell than wes he  
 Roboam regnyd in Judé. 680  
 Capis Silvius, but were,  
 In Rome aucht and twenty yhere  
 As lord regnyd, quhen Asa  
 Wes kyng rygnand in Juda.  
 That tyme in Chawmpayne he  
 Gert fownd and mak a gret cyté.  
 In Rome Carpent eftyre that  
 Regnyd, quhen that Josaphat  
 Was off Juda lord and kyng.  
 F. 42. b. Syne off Rome the governyng 690  
 Tiberius take, and wes off it  
 Nyne yhere lord, as sayis the wryt.  
 Than Octosias off Judé  
 The kynryk had in propyrte.  
 The wattyre of Tybir than alsua  
 Callid be name wes Albula,  
 Bot for this Tyberius,

As sayis Tytus Lyvyus,  
 Drownide wes in that ryvere,  
 Thai callyd it Tyber syne, but were. 700  
 In Rome syne regnyde Agryppa,  
 Quhen Acab regnyd in Juda,  
 And Homere, as the story sayis,  
 Wes in to Grece in to tha dayis.  
 Syne regnyd in Rome Armulus  
 That had to surname Sylvius,  
 Nyntene wyntyr regnyd he,  
 Quhen Joas kyng was off Jude  
 Thre and thretty wyntyr syne.  
 Eftyre hym regnyd Awentyne. 710  
 In his tyme Amasias  
 Kyng in Juda rygnand was.

## CHAP. V.

Off Sardanapillus ghe sall her  
 En tpll this next Chapter.

**A**WCHT hundyr wyntyr and sextene,  
 Or God wes off the Maydyn clene  
 Borne, the land off Assyry  
 Sardanapillus halyly  
 Aucht be lyne off herytage  
 Ewyn descendand be lynyage  
 Fra Nynus, befor than kyng,  
 At that land had in governyng. 720  
 His oys wes mare wytht rok to spyne  
 Than landys to the crowne to wyne,  
 And kunandnes fer mar he had

How mony here the spyndyll made,  
Than for to blasowne in to were,  
As his knychtis oysid to bere,  
Armys off thaire awncestry,  
Or ony dedys off cheŵalry.

Off Mede the kynrik than in cheffe,  
Wytth alkyne serwice and releffe, 730  
Arbatus held off this kyng,  
The quhilk had all tyme gret yharnyng  
This Sardanapillus tyll have sene,  
And off his duellyng tyll have bene,  
And tyll haff had off hym reward,  
Syn in to cheffe he wes his larde  
Off all the kynrik off Medy,  
Off kynd his hart gaffe hym, for-thi,  
Befor ony othir lard  
To mak him serwys for reward. 740

F. 43.

Apon this purpos tyll assay  
Hys lord in till gud array,  
He buskyt hym rycht honestly,  
And welle arayid his cumpany,  
And to the towne off Babilone  
Wyth his court he come onone  
Innys he tuk, and bad rycht thare  
And realy mad hym to fare,  
Bidand opertunytte,  
And tyme, his our-larde for to se. 750

Sa in the castelle on a day  
He come in tyll his best aray,  
Wytth his court and his menyhe,  
Commendyd off gret honeste.  
Quhare that he wend for tyll have sene  
Lordys cled in red and grene,

Knychtys, ladyis, and squerys,  
 Haukys, hwndys and courserys,  
 And thare lord in fayr array  
 Amang thaim in to joy and play ; 760  
 Than he fand that drowy doude  
 Amang a pak off karlynys loud  
 Flytand redy for to fecht,  
 As he wes wandland off his wecht ;  
 His yharne sponnyn resaʱwand,  
 And towe to spynyng delyverand.  
 Quhen Arbatus his lord had sene  
 Apon this wys, he wes full tene,  
 And hym removide than in hy,  
 And passyd agayne hame in Medy ; 770  
 Thare his ost he gadyryt sone,  
 And passyd to Babilone, but hone,  
 And wyttht the Sardanapillus fast  
 Faucht, and tuk hym at the last,  
 And gert be maid on a bale fyre  
 Off gret schyddys byrnand schyre,  
 And that fyre he gert cast in  
 Sardanapillus, for to bryn,  
 And gert thame all hale off Assyry  
 Mak tyll hyme homage halyly, 780  
 And hald thare land off hym in cheffe  
 Fra thine, wyttht serwys and releffe  
 And trewage to the Medys pay,  
 That held off thame befor that day.

This wes the fyrst confusioun-  
 That ewyre yhit come to Babyloune,  
 That wes the mast pryncipalle  
 Off the fyrst foure Kynrikis hale,  
 And stud ellewryn hundyr yhere,

And foure and sixty passyde clere, 790  
 In wyrschipe growand and in state  
 Quhyll the tyme that Arbate  
 This ryffille maid, and fra that day  
 Babilone wes falyhand ay.

Thus in sege a sot to se,  
 Or do a dowde in dignite,  
 Sall ger standand statys stavire,

F. 43. b.

And wyll bath wyt and wyrschype wavir.

It is langsum for to telle  
 How mony changys that tyme felle 800  
 Betwene the lordys off Assyry  
 And the Medys syndryly,  
 Quhill ane, quhill othir, tributere,  
 As werd off were maid thaim to stere.

Procas than off Ytaly  
 Had the lordschype halyly.

## CHAP. VI.

*This Chapter sall show rehers  
 The successiounne off Pers.*

SYNE eftyre that tyme [Arbates]  
 Lord and syre off Medys wes,  
 And regnyd twa and twenty yhere  
 Assayid oft [in] werys sere. 810  
 Tyll hym succedyd Diocles,  
 That in all dedys douchty wes ;  
 Sere landys lyand hym aboute,  
 Tyll Medys he maid wndirlowt.  
 Astrages syne eftyre that

Off Medys all the lordschipe gat,  
 That ayrys male off his body  
 Gat nane ; off that land, for-thi,  
 Hys douchtyr sone hys ayre he maid,  
 To propyr name that Cyrus haid,  
 And he wytth fycht and hard batayle  
 Forbare na thyng for tyll assayle  
 Hys eldfadyr Astrages,  
 And he than in his reklesnes  
 Foryhet the mys that he had done  
 Tyll Arpallus, quhen he his sone  
 Had slayne, and syne gert hym be set  
 Before his fadyre at the met,  
 In quartarys lyand on a weschelle,  
 Wytth precyous spycys farsyd welle.  
 Bot he gert all rawe be lewyde  
 The twa handys and the hewide,  
 The quhilk he gert the fadyr se,  
 Quhen off the body full wes he,  
 And luche at hym dispytwysly  
 In hethyng off that mangery.

820

830

All the cure off his batayle,  
 And off his ost the governaile,  
 He lippynynd to this Arpallus  
 The quhilk be tresowne tyll Cyrus  
 Yhald thaim. Than Astrages,  
 That in his hart all angry wes,  
 Hys ost assemblyd hastyly,  
 And on the Perseis doggydly  
 He duschyd on quhyll that in fycht  
 Mony dour to ded wes dycht  
 Cryand fast that he suld dé  
 Quha ewyr hym maid on bak to flé.

840

Thare the Medys war so felle,  
 And on the Perseys sa cruell, 850  
 That mony douchty thai gert dé,  
 The lave on bak begouth to fle,  
 The Medys nere had hade the felde  
 Na ware the wywys, that behelde  
 And sawe the Perseys in batayle,  
 How fayntly thai begouth to fayle,  
 To stand thai maid thaim fayre prayere,  
 And consalyd thaim on fayr manere.  
 Bot the Perseys war sa rad,  
 For the pres thai war in stad, 860  
 That thai dowtyd all to de;  
 For-thi, thai maid thame all to fle.  
 Than all thai wywys wytth a cry  
 Reprovand thaim dispitwysly,  
 Tyt wp thare clathis outh thaire scheyre,  
 And poyntyt to thaire prewa gere  
 That betwene thaire lymys stude;  
 And wytth a schout, as thai war wude,  
 " In here, in here, syne yhe ar rade,  
 And in sa staverand state ar stade, 870  
 Yhone folk ar felowne for the nanys,  
 (Thai rowpyd wytth a rare at anys,)  
 Sen othir succoure have yhe nane,  
 Na yhe can sé na bettyr wane,  
 Gyve yhe wyll yhoure lyvys kepe  
 In tyll oure cutkane nowe yhe crepe;  
 And here in, gyve yhe hyd the hevid,  
 Thare owt mon all the lave be lewyde."  
 The Perseys than aschamyd were,  
 And turnyd agayne wytth thare powere, 880  
 And wytth the Medys faucht sa fast



Quhill thai thame wencust at the last  
 And off thame slw a gret party  
 And wan the feld rycht dowchtily.

Thane thaire wes tane Astrages,  
 Tyl Cyrus he delyverid wes,  
 The quhilk maid hym halyly  
 Lord and syre off Hyrcany,  
 Bot Medy and the landys thare  
 To Pers fra thine wes tributare ;  
 Bot thare wes cyteis syndry,  
 That aucht trewage to Medy,  
 The quhilkys in to Cyrus dayis  
 Payid noucht thare for alwayis.  
 This Cyrus wes in gret traŵayle,  
 And moŵand were and hard batayle.

890

## CHAP. VII.

How sall ghe here in till he  
 Off a Tyrane gret felony.

F. 44. b.

**F**ALARYS off Cyzile than  
 Wes in hys dedys [a] felown man ;  
 The Agrigentynys halyly  
 He wндыde wytth his felowny.  
 Agrigent wes a regyowne  
 Famows and off gud renowne,  
 In to the Se wytth in that yle,  
 That is the kynryk off Cyzile.  
 This Falarys wes off dedys fell,  
 And off intentys rycht cruelle,  
 Till hym wes bath indifferent,

900

Culpabile in payne, and innocent ;  
For ay in a delyt wes he  
Men towrmentid in payne to se, 910  
And for to se thaire kowntenans  
That thai wald mak in thaire pennans.  
He ay in to this lykyng stude,  
Swa nere hym by a smyth wes gude,  
Perillus callid, wythin his land  
This smyth ay duelt, hys craft oysande,  
And set all hale his diligens  
Till have had the benyvolens  
Off thys tyrand, that wes were  
To wyne na tyne all owt befer, 920  
As nowe lardys be renowne  
Ar comounne off condityoune.  
This smyth that kend to this tyrand  
Qubat thying war till him mast plesand,  
He made in hy a bull off bras,  
Large and hole wyth-in it was,  
And sa rowmé wyth-in wes it  
That ewyne wp rycht a man mycht syt  
Wytht-in, for it wes made sa wyde,  
Wytht a dure opynand on the syde 930  
Ordanyt all for thare entré  
That wytht-in sulde pynyde be,  
And to be stekyd fast wytht-owt ;  
Syne a gret fyre made abowt  
Sulde ger the pynyde wytht-in rare  
All lyk a nowte thoucht man he ware.  
This lume mad apon this wys,  
Polyst fayre and rycht fetys,  
This smyth brought in to presand,  
It for to gyve to this tyrand. 940

Falaris, that all aboute  
 Sawe this welle, bath in and owt,  
 And gert hym all the fawtys mend  
 That mycht be sene off it or kend,  
 And gert that ilk smyth in ga  
 To prewe the lenth and breid alsua,  
 And gert syne steke the dure with-out  
 And kendyll fyre rycht fast about  
 Off thornys and off schyddys gret;  
 The smytht wyttht-in, quhen he felde hete 950  
 Paynand hym aye mare and mare,  
 F. 45. Off nede behowde thain for to rare  
 Swa that he like wes in to rowt  
 In tyll his dede thrawe till a nowte;  
 The fyre wyth-owt thare kendyllt sa fast  
 The smyth wyttht-in wes at the last,  
 Wyttht paynys strang, but all remede,  
 Wyttht-in hys handy werk thare dede:  
 Swa caus and matyr bath gave he  
 Tyll his dede, and tyll cruelté. 960

## CHAP. VIII.

When he constitutyon was  
 fyrst ordangt the Olympias.

SEVYN hundyr wyntyr and four score  
 And fully fyvtene yhere before  
 Or God off Mary borne was,  
 In Grece the Olympias,  
 In the honowr off Jupitere,  
 Wes ordanyd ilk[a] fyft yhere.

And for this caus it ordanyd thai  
At tha termys, but delay,  
That thai foryhet noucht be na wys,  
And at the cost sulde les supprys 970  
At tha termys than wytth in,  
And he that mycht [the gre] thare wyn  
Off towrneamentys, or justyng,  
Menstralsy, or wersslyng,  
Or quhat kyn gamyn that fyft yhere  
In the Olympy cryid were,  
Thare sulde be made hym na warnyng  
Off quhatkyn thyng he mad askyng.  
This a quhyle in oys thai hade  
And syne be statute thai it made, 980  
And fra that constitutioun  
Thai made in thare descriptioun,  
Evry ilke yhere be yhere the date,  
In all the letterys at thai wrate,  
Fra thine all thare inherdans,  
Held that oys and that ordynans,  
And for that Grece wes off gret fame,  
And than sa realle wes off name,  
Before the tyme the Romanys ras  
That date in tyll all landys was, 990  
For floure in Grece wes off clergy,  
And off wurschipe, and off chewalry.  
For-thi, mony landys ware  
Led be thaire oys and be thare fare.

Off Italy the kyng Procas  
Wes ded than, and regnand was  
His sone thare eft, Amylyus,  
That callid wes alsua Silvius.  
He regnyd fourty yhere and foure,

- And banysyd his brodyre Munytoure, 1000  
 That had a dowchtyr callid Rea ;  
 F. 45. b. Scho wes delyver off twynnys twa,  
 The tane wes callid Romulus,  
 The secund brodyr wes Remus.  
 Throuch enchantment on Rea  
 Gottyn, thai sayd, thir twynnys twa.  
 Bot be the lawys, nevyr-the-les,  
 In erd all quyk scho dolwyn wes,  
 And thir twa twynnys fundyn were  
 Wndyr a bra be Tybere nere, 1010  
 Quhar a hyrd than apon cas,  
 Fawsculus that callyd was,  
 Happynynd to cum by that bra  
 Quhar that he fand thir twynnys twa,  
 And to Laurentia, his wyffe,  
 That spendyd in to lust hyr lyff,  
 And mekyll wyth hyr body wan,  
 (Quharefor scho Lupa callid wes than,  
 And the bordale hous was syne  
 Callyd Lupanar in Latyne), 1020  
 Thir twynnys twa he broucht in hy,  
 And bade hyr kepe thame tendyrly ;  
 And wytth hyr war thai nwryst thare  
 Till thai to manhed cummyn ware ;  
 And for a scho wolffe in Latyne  
 Is Lupa callyd, thare-efftyre syne,  
 In Rome quhare that thare figure  
 Wes sene in ald tyme, in sculpture,  
 Or payntynd, thai twa soukand wes  
 A wolf, in tyll ane liklynes. 1030  
 Thir twa gadyryt off revarys,  
 Off thewys, and off mysdoarys,

A gret multitud in hy,  
 And ras off were rycht stoutely,  
 And slwe Amylius that before  
 Banysyd thare eldfadyre, Munitore,  
 And restoryd thare gudsyre  
 Tyll his land and hys empyre.

## CHAP. IX.

*When the Kyngis Stane off Spanghe  
 First come in Irlande, and Brettanphe.*

IN the mene tyme that this felle,  
 That ye herd off thir bredyre telle, 1040  
 Thare was regnand a mychty Kyng,  
 That had all Spayne in governyng :  
 This kyng mony sonnys had,  
 Off ane off tha yhit mast he made,  
 That Symon-Brek wes callyde be name,  
 Ane honest man and off gud fame.  
 A gret Stane this Kyng than had,  
 That for this Kyngis sete wes made,  
 And haldyne wes a gret jowale  
 Wytht-in the kynryk off Spayne hale. 1050

F. 46.

This kyng bad this Symon ta  
 That Stane, and in tyll Yrland ga,  
 And wyn that land and occupy,  
 And halde that Stane perpetually,  
 And mak it his sege thare  
 As thai off Spayne did off it are.

This Symon did [than] as the Kyng  
 Fullyly gave hym in byddyng,

And wane Yrland, and chesyd his place,  
 Quhare honest and mast lykand was. 1060  
 Thare he made a gret cyté,  
 And in it syne that Stane gert he  
 Be set, and haldyn for jowale  
 And chartyr off that Kynryke hale.

Fergus-Ercson fra hym syne  
 Down discendand ewyn be lyne  
 In to the fyve and fyfty gré,  
 As ewyne reknand men may se,  
 Broucht this Stane wytht-in Scotland,  
 Fyrst quhen he come and wane that land : 1070  
 And fyrst it set in Ikkolmkil,  
 And Skune thare-eftyre it wes broucht tylle.  
 And thare it wes syne mony day,  
 Quhyll Edward gert have it away  
 Kyng off Ingland, and syne he  
 Gert it set in Lundyn be,  
 Eftyre that Jhesu Cryst wes borne,  
 To sauffe oure lyff that was forlorne,  
 A thousand and thre hundyr yhere  
 And ten thare tyll, or thare by nere. 1080

A.D. 1310.

Now will I the werd rehers,  
 As I fynd off that Stane in wers :

NI FALLAT FATUM, SCOTI, QUOCUNQUE LOCATUM

INVENIENT LAPIDEM, REGNARE TENENTUR IBIDEM.

" Bot gyff werdys falyhand be,  
 Quhare evyr that stane yhe segyt se,  
 Thare sall the Scottis be regnand,  
 And lorddys hale oure all that land."

## CHAP. X.

Off Symon-Brekhis linage here  
 Next folowys in this Chapter.

THIS Symon-Brek eftyre that  
 Fyakak-Bolgeg to sone gat;  
 He fadyr wes off Duat-Locres;  
 Eakak-Vadek his sone wes; 1090  
 And Usuemoere his sone gat;  
 Costek-Baelbrek eftyre that;  
 And his sone callid wes Melgé;  
 Jero syne thare-est gat he,  
 That fadyr wes off Comata;  
 And his sone wes callid Elela-  
 Casiaclek, that eftyre then  
 Gat Eacak-Aldeten;  
 His sone Catan gat Curé;  
 Fyere-Elmael gat he; 1100  
 And hys sone Fyere-Anroet  
 Fadyr wes off Fyre-Roet;  
 Fyre-Cetaroat eftyre that  
 Angus-Turnec to sone gat;  
 Fyarak gat Neroen;  
 Ellala gat Earen:  
 Feraret to sone gat he,  
 That Fergo gat, and he Mawè;  
 Arynden wes syne fadyre  
 Tyll Regyne, that gat Roteyre; 1120  
 Hys sone Trere gat Rosyne;  
 And he syne fadyr wes to Fyne;



He had a sone calde Dedaa ;  
 Jaere his sone gat Elela ;  
 Elela gat Eogen ;  
 Edarste-Nyl his sone wes then ;  
 And he Conare-Moere gat ;  
 Corbre-Fynmor eftyr that  
 Gat Dare-Dowrmere, and he syne  
 To sone gat Corbre callyd Congyne ; 1130  
 Lugnaes-Allodeg  
 Gat Magalama that Stege,  
 That Conare gat ; and he alsua  
 Cadak-Rydesedek-Corbre-Rygada  
 Gat ; and syne, as I herd telle,  
 Fyacrak syne Catynelle  
 Gat Eacrak-Andoad ;  
 To sone he Acyre-Cyrry had ;  
 Hys sone syne Fideacek  
 Gat Crudyde, that Seancormek ; 1140  
 Eftyre this Seancormek  
 Fedemet gat Rephynek ;  
 Engus-Byntynet, but les,  
 Off Fedynet-as-Lugeg wes  
 Fadyre, and syne eftyr that  
 Angus-Fyere to sone he gat ;  
 Eacak-Mourea-More  
 Gat Ert, and he gat Fergus-More.  
 To thir or I rekyne ma,  
 Tyll othire matere wyll I ga. 1150

[Explicit Liber Tertius.]

**THE FERDE BUKE**  
**OF THE**  
**ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL**  
**OF SCOTLAND.**



THE FERDE BUKE  
OF THE  
ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL  
OF SCOTLAND.

---

In this Chapitere behald and luk  
The Proloug off the Ferde Buk.

**T**ULLYUS that of Rethoryk  
A Tretys made to be publik,  
Fourme off dyte and fayre spekyng  
Plesand tyll oys and tyll heryng,  
A garland, [said,] gottyn wyth gret peryle,  
Grene suld lestand be lang quhile,  
Onwalowyd be ony intervale  
F. 48. Off tymys, bot ay in wertu hale.  
Be this clerkis autoryte  
A garland as a crowne sulde be 10  
Wndyrstandyn wytth all rycht,  
A takyn off wurschype, state or hycht.  
The crowne wes gyvyn for wyctory  
In auld tyme; Saynt Paule for-thy  
Tymotheum fayrly techid,  
Off hym-self quhen thus he prechyde :  
    *Certamen certavi: Cursum consummavi.*  
    *De reliquo reposita Est mihi corona.*  
The grene hew delyte oftsys,  
Oys, or plesance signyfys.

Quha the crowne than will hald grene,  
 Off thaim that has before thaim bene, 20  
 Drawe thar delyt till here or rede  
 Thare famows werkis dwne in dede :  
 Swa, tyll excyte yhour delyte,  
 I have set me now to wryte  
 And to trete in this wolume,  
 Quhen byggyde was, be Romule, Rome,  
 That his brothir Remus slwe,  
 Fyrst tyll that lordschipe quhen he drwe ;  
 Wytth othir storys and incydens  
 Plesand lik tyll yhoure reverens, 30  
 That ar this Tretys tyll here or rede,  
 In tyll this part gyffe yhe procede  
 Fra end tyll end, yhe sall welle kene,  
 Be power off gret douchty men  
 That the Romanys wan the crowne,  
 And had in tyll subjectione  
 All the warld oblyst thane  
 And hale subdyt tyll a man,  
 That wes Octowryane Empryoure,  
 Quhen Cryst wes borne oure Sawwyoure 40  
 Off the maykles Maydyn brycht,  
 Now crownyd Queyn in hewynnys hycht.  
 Till hyr suete wyrgynyte  
 This Tretys I commend, and me,  
 Tyll end my purpos swa to bryng,  
 That all redwne in hyr lowyng.

Explicit Prologus.

**The Chapteris off the Ferd Buk.**

- i. **Q**UHEN Romulus and Remus maid Rome.
- ii. Quhen Consules governyd Rome.
- iii. The destructyoun off Babilone.
- iiii. Quhen Cyrus wan the Kyng Cresus.
- v. Off Cyrus dedis.
- vi. How Darius wes discumfyt.
- vii. How Exerces wes discumfyt.
- F.47. b. viii. Quhen the Scottis wes before the Peychtis.
- ix. Off Brennyus and Bellynus.
- x. Off a fell Pestylens.
- xi. Off Alysawndrys fyrst rysyng.
- xii. Howe the Tarentynys warrayd the Romanys.
- xiii. Quhen Hanyball wes discumfyt.
- xiiii. Off a Flud that the Cyte nere oure-yhude.
- xv. Quhen Hanyball discumfyt the Romanys.
- xvi. Off thre bollys off Ryngis send to Cartage.
- xvii. How Hanyball wes lettyd off his purpos.
- xviii. Quhen the Kyng Antyocus anyd wytth the  
Romanys.
- xix. Quhen fyrst the Pechtis come in Scotland.
- xx. Quhen Cartage wes ordanyd to be wndwne.
- xxi. Quhen the Romanys wan Achaya.
- xxii. Quhen the Romanys gert Cartage be byggid agayne.
- xxiii. Quhen mony Romanys ware slayne, and women  
fell wode.

xxiv. Off syndry taknys that fell in Rome.

xxv. Off Julyus Cesare.

xxvi. Off Octoviane.

## CHAP. I.

Whene Reme and Romule the Cite  
Off Rome fyrst gert biggit be.

SEVYN hundyr wyntyr and fyftene  
Or God was off the Maydyn clene  
Borne, and off Olympias  
The sext ordyr rynnand was,  
That in to Grece than was thar date  
In all the chartrys that thai wrate,  
Off Rome the gret cyté was made,  
And off it hale the lordschipe hade  
Romule, that his brothir slwe  
Swne fra he to lordschipe drwe, 10  
And eftyr hym syne gert he  
Rome be callyt that cyté,  
And tyll hym that lordschipe hale  
In profyt tuk, and governale,  
And wallyt it rycht welle wythoute,  
Wytht dykis off fale and mwde aboute.  
Ane hundyr men he chesyde off eyld,  
That wayk ware wapnys for to weyld,  
Bot, for wyt and gud consale,  
To tha he lypnyd the governale 20  
Off the comoune state, and he  
Tha Senatowrys gert callyt be.  
He chesyd syne a thousand hale,  
Yhong and lykly to batayle,  
And Knychtis he gert call all tha,  
Thaire name in Latyne sowndys swa.



Romule off eylde was twenty yhere  
 And twa quhen he begouth to stere  
 In Rome, and regnand was auchtene  
 Yheris, [ful] in dedis clene

30

F. 48. And syne hapnyd he peryst was  
 Throw hard tempest and swdane cas.

Eftyre that dede was Romulus  
 Numa regnyd Pompilius  
 Ane and fourty yhere, and he  
 Fyrst gert ordane knychtis fé.  
 Before hym Marche wes, but were,  
 The fyrst begynnyng off the yhere,  
 Bot he gert the monethis twa,  
 Janwere the fyrst off tha,  
 The secund Fevryhere, but let,  
 Alwayis before Marche [be] set.  
 In hys tyme Ezechias fre  
 Wes kyng regnand in Jwdé.  
 Sybile than Eryttea  
 Was in the tyme off this Numa.

40

Eftyre hym regnyd Tullius,  
 Be surname cald Hostilyus.  
 In tyll his tyme Manassé  
 Wes kyng regnand in Jwdé.  
 He oysid mykyll for to were  
 Purpur, silk, and browdyn gere.  
 Before his tyme the Romanys hale  
 Lywyd in pes wytth-out batayle  
 A welle lang tyme, bot eftyre he  
 Gert tyll his lordschipe bowsum be  
 The Albanyis, that in that quhile  
 Fra Rome off space wes auchtene myle,  
 And othir natyownys mony sere,

50

To Rome he mad than tributere 60  
 In tyll his tyme mekyll off prys  
 Wes Sybyle Samya the wys.  
 The kyng than off Spartany,  
 The cyté maid off Bysanty ;  
 Now thai oys in landys all  
 Constantynopyll that to calle.

Eftyre the dede off Tullius  
 In Rome regnyd the kyng Antus.  
 In tyll his tyme Josyas  
 Kyng in Jude regnand was, 70  
 He gert be maid a gret cyté,  
 And Osten it callyd he.  
 He regnyd thre and twenty yhere  
 And dyde off profyte dedys sere.

Till hym succedyde syne Pryscus,  
 To surname callid Tarqwynyus,  
 He maid a burche rownd in his dayis  
 Wytht-in the towne till oys thare playis  
 As to dans, pype, or syng,  
 Or to wresstyl, and mak justyng. 80  
 Cysternys he gert be maid depe,  
 Fylth or wattyr for to kepe.

F. 48. b.

That all the glwt wyth-in the towne  
 In tymys mycht be castyne downe  
 Throucht thai cysternys for to ryne  
 The gret wattyr off Tibere in  
 That the cyté mycht ay be  
 Kepyd fra glwt in honesté.  
 The Capytale he [fyrst] gert ma,  
 And be name [it] callid swa ; 90  
 For as thai ware the grounde ryband,  
 Off ane man [the] hevye thai fand

For-owtyn body, quhar-for thai  
 The Capytale it callid ay.  
 In Rome he regnyd thretty yhere  
 And aucht owte-oure tha passid clere ;  
 Quhen Joachym off Judé  
 Had all the land in propyrté.

Eftyr hym regnyd Servius,  
 Callid be surname Tullius. 100

He gert be drawyn dykis depe  
 Abowt the wallys, at thai mycht kepe  
 Thaire towne, gyff ony wald assayle  
 Thame wytth assawt, or wytth batayle.  
 He wes the fyrst kyng, as thai say,  
 That gert the Romanys custum pay ;  
 Befor his tyme thai war sa fre  
 That thai wyst noucht quhat toll suld be.  
 Syne slayne was this Serwius,

Throucht ane wes cald Tarquynyus 110

The Proude, and, quhen that he was dede,  
 He kyng regnand wes in hys stede.  
 In to this tyme Sedechias  
 Kyng in Juda regnand was,  
 And Nabugodonosor he  
 Kyng than regnand in Caldé,  
 Made the gret confusioun  
 Off Jowis, and thare destructiowne.

The Ferde Eylde heir endis,  
 The quhilk off yherys contenys, 120

As the Hebrwys reknys clere,  
 Foure hundyr wyntere and thre yhere ;  
 The Sevynty clerkis sayis oure  
 Four hundyr yher four score and foure.

## CHAP. II.

When effire kyngis Consules  
In to Rome first chosyn wes.

**E**FTYR the dede off Servius  
In Rome proude Tarqwynyus  
Regnyd, and than Cyrus kyng  
Off Pers had all the governyng.  
He was a man off gret felny  
And wmbethought hym increly 130  
With quhat tormentis men mycht be  
Punysyde for thaire inyqwYTE,

As fetrys or presonyng,  
Stokkys, boyis, or banysyng.

He wes exilyd in his dayis

F. 49. Off Rome, as Frere Martyne sayis,

For his sonys inyquyte,

That had deforsyd a lady fre,

A gentill-woman off gud fame,

Lucretia was callid hir name. 140

Scho plenyheyd tyll hir husbandis sone

Off the defoule wes till hyr done,

Till hir fadyr and hir kyne,

Till all syne that scho mycht to wyn,

And led hyr dayis a quhile in pyne,

And alwe hyr-self for sorowe syne.

Syne this proud Tarquynyus

Saw that he wes exilyd thus,

He knyht hym to the Tuskanyis,

And warrayd wytht thame the Romanis, 150

And wyttht his ost, apon a day,  
 To Tybyr he come, in gud aray,  
 And quhen thai saw his gret powere,  
 The Romanys all affrayid were,  
 Bot syne it hapnyd thame to be  
 Accordyt welle be fayre treté.

Thir seŵyne Kyngis regnand were  
 Twa hundyr foure and fourty yhere ;  
 And fra the kyngis thus can ses,  
 In Rome thai chesyd twa Consules, 160  
 And tha twa reng sulde bot a yhere,  
 For dowt gyff that thai regnand were  
 Langare tyme, that thai suld rys  
 In lordschype in swa hawtane wys,  
 That the comownys vyleusly  
 Greŵyt sulde be throwe thaire maistry.  
 And twa was ordanyd for this skyll,  
 That gyff ane wald set his wyll  
 For lykyng mesoure tyll excede,  
 The tothir argwe suld his dede, 170  
 And swa chastyid he suld be  
 Fra foule lust and inyqwYTE.  
 Consules than thai maid twa,  
 Brute and Lucius cald war tha.

Than in Rome Pictogoras  
 Deyde, and Anaxagoras;  
 That tyme alsua Socrates  
 The wenum drank and poysownyd wes.  
 Arystotyll than, but were,  
 Wes off eyld bot aughtene yhere, 180  
 And wndyr Plato, the wytty,  
 Studyid and herd Phylosophy.

## CHAP. III.

Now how the towne off Babilone  
 Was brocht till confusione.

FYVE hundyr yhere and aucht beforne,  
 Or God wes off the Maydyn borne,  
 The fyrst off the Consules,  
 Brute be name callyd wes,  
 F. 49. b. The Sabynys in to stout aray  
 Made thame the cyté till assay,  
 The Romanys a dytoure made,  
 That oure the lawe the maystry had, 190  
 And the Consules be fere  
 He sulde excede in all powere,  
 In this tyme that I yhoue rehers  
 Cyrus that was kyng off Pers  
 Wan a gret part off Sythy  
 And mony landis in Asy,  
 Syne wytth his ost [he] come onone  
 For tyll assege Babylone,  
 Bot the rywere off Ewfrate  
 Swa reych than rysand wes on spate, 200  
 That he mycht noucht the towne cum nere,  
 Bot worthyd to byd wytth hys powere,  
 Quhille the weltrand wawys kene  
 Suld a part have swagyde bene.  
 Swa was in tyll his ost a knyght,  
 Yhong and joly, bawld and wycht,  
 Fayr off fassowne and fetys,  
 Off prowes prowyd, and off prys,

Off Capados, Schyre Alaryke,  
 In all that ost wes nane hym lyk, 210  
 Sa fayre off fasowne and swa fre,  
 And gentyll in tyll all wes he;  
 He luwyd perdrewry dame Sabyll,  
 That lady then wes off Pamphile,  
 He paramowrys so stratly luwyd  
 That perelys as playis he pruwyde  
 Apon a cowsoure pouple gray  
 Adressly he sat that day  
 In tyll a gowne ewyn schaply wyde,  
 In his revel bot sadyll syde, 220  
 Wytht brokyn lettrys on that gowne,  
 Byllyde wele wes his resowne,  
 Susus geta, that sulde be,  
 Ese off consale opyn yhe:  
 And browdyn wele was his penowne,  
 Off gold rampand a lyowne,  
 He bar in tyll asure brycht,  
 Hys ger was flamand all at rycht.  
 Thus quhill the ost thare howyng maid  
 And swagyng off the wattyr bade, 230  
 He thought prowes for till pruve  
 For hyr that he lent on his luve:  
 The coursoure he strake wytht the spurys  
 And walepand oure floys and furys.  
 All befor the ost he rade  
 Quhar stend for stend the coursere maid,  
 And at the bra quhare nerest was  
 The furde, quhar men oysid to pas,  
 The hors he hardynyt irwysly,  
 The coursere lap delyverly 240  
 All oure the bank in to the flude,

F. 50. The stoure fere owre thare hewydis stude.  
The wawys war wode, the wattyre depe,  
Be na way mycht the knyght hym kepe.  
Bot for to tell yhoue schortly than  
Drownyd wes thare bath hors and mau.

Than Cyrus that this syght has sene,  
For angyr off his hart, and tene  
That sa hys knyght [he] lesyd hade,  
Gret athys swore and wowys made 250  
Tyll all his goddis, yhong and awlde,  
That wynd and wattyre had in waulde,  
That he sulde off that wattyre be  
Revengeyde in to sic degre,  
And sa schalde it sulde be made  
That, set a woman suld it wade,  
Hyr kneys off it suld noucht be wate  
For nakyne weddare, spryng, na spate.  
Than gert he drawe that revere all  
In to foure hundyre and sixty smalle 260  
And narow swyrlis, throuch feldis brade ;  
That gret rewere sa schalde he made  
That slyke and klay micht than be sene  
Quhare wattyre depe before had bene.

Than the ost, but mare abade,  
Thare passyng to the cyté made,  
Throuch the depe slyk and the clay,  
Haldand on the nerest way ;  
And thaire he lay, wytht his powere,  
The cyté quhill he wan, but were, 270  
And gare cast all the wallys down  
Off Babilone, bath toure and towne,  
That chymys was off Assyry,  
At all poynt byggid propirly,



Set in a lawnd off fresch flewoure  
 Off haylsum ayre, and suet sawoure,  
 Wytht wode and wattyre all abowte  
 Plesand, fayr, wytht-owtyn dowte,  
 A hundyre yhattis off irne gret  
 Fra before that mekyll yhet, 280  
 And ma yhit mycht rekynyd be  
 All abowte that gret cyté;  
 And fra that mekyll yhete before  
 Four hundyr stadys and foure score  
 It had in umgang all abowte,  
 And tha to rekyn ar, but dowte,  
 Ane and fyfty myle and mare,  
 And all abowte the wallys ware  
 Fyve and twenty elne brade,  
 Wytht sykyre syment sadly made 290  
 Wytht ane hundyre elne on hycht,  
 At alkyne poynt perfytylly dycht,  
 And, as the clerk Orosyus  
 In tyll hys Cornykyll tellys ws,  
 F. 50. b. It war bot fantumlyke and fabyllé,  
 And noucht till al men yhit trowabille,  
 That mannys wertu, or hys wyte,  
 Mycht othir do or wndo it.

## CHAP. IV.

This Chapitere tellis how Cyrus  
 Ran off were kyng Cressus.

**Q**WHEN thus wes wonnyn Babylon,  
 Cyrus wytht his ost onone

In Lidys past, wytth playne batayle,  
The kyng Cresus till assayle.

This Cresus, that I yhoue rehers,  
Held Lydys off the kyng off Pers ;  
Bot ay till hym he wes rebel,

In were, and in all consale felle :

Bot for he wes in dedys stout,

Off hym ay Cyrus had gret dout,

For rych and mychty ay wes he,

And in all dedys awysé.

310

He prayid till his god Appolyne

To grawnt hym wyttyng quhat kyne fyne

Last suld fall off that discorde

That was betwene hym and his lorde.

Than wryttyn was tyll hym this wers

In Latyne that I wyll rehers.

*(Crescens perdet Alini, transgressus maxima  
regna;)*

" The Creyhsceand sall gret landys tyne,

The wattyr oure passand off Alyne."

This sentence off this wers wes thare

For the kyng off Lidis bare,

320

Off gowlys in to sylver brycht

Thre creyhsceandis in his armys dycht.

This awnsuere Cresus thocht rycht gude

For othir-wayis he wndyrstude ;

Than eftyrwarde the gamyn yhede,

Or werde off were, prowyd in dede,

And said, " The landys that I sall tyne

Ar Cyrus landys, and noucht myn,

That I sall wytth myn ost oure ryde,

To fell his ogert and his pryde."

330

Hys ost than sone and hastily

He assemblid, and in hy  
 Oure that wattyr he passid onone,  
 For tyll suppowale Babilone,  
 Quhar Cyrus lay, as yhe herd here,  
 In tyll assege wytth hys powere,  
 And thare he schawid hym, on ane hycht,  
 Hys ost arayand to the fycht.  
 Bot quhen he saw on quhat kyne wys  
 Wencust were the Babilonys, 340  
 And the cyté wonnyn nere,  
 He changid purpos and manere,  
 And turnyd bak, and tuk the flycht,  
 The Perseys lyggid on at rycht,  
 F. 51. Folowand fast and egyrly,  
 Chasand hym dispytwysly,  
 And slwe hys men down, here and thare,  
 Quhare-eyyr that thai ourtakyn were ;  
 Hym-self eschapyd narowly,  
 And sauff wes fra that jwperdy. 350  
 This Cresus eftyre this affray,  
 On a nycht in his bed lay,  
 And, dremand in his slepe, thought he  
 Wes in a crope set off a tre,  
 Quhare Jupiter wyth rayne hym wete,  
 God Phebus quhyle wytth sone hym het ;  
 He thought in tyll his slepying swa  
 That he [wes] stade betwene thai twa,  
 All the tyme that he thare lay,  
 Quhille on the morne day, 360  
 Than Fariva, his douchtyr yhing,  
 He callid, and tauld [hir] his dremyng ;  
 For scho oysid for till telle  
 Thyngis sere before thai felle,

As wychys dois, or nycromancerys,  
Disaawaynde men on thare manerys,  
And throucht the dewyll dissavyid are thai.  
Than neid the certane suth can say.  
Bot throuch thame quhen that he is sua  
Trawalyd, that he mon ansure ma 370  
The ansuere that he to thame mayis  
Offt dowbyll wnderstandyn hayis,  
And sa it hapnys that men are  
Dyssayvid oft on that manere ;  
For the thyngis that is to be  
To wyt is Goddys propyrte,  
For-thi thar-off the certane  
Is nane can telle bot He alane.  
Yhit nevyr-the-les this damysel  
Tauld hyr fadyr that efftyr fell, 380  
That Cyrus suld hym tak in ire,  
And swayk hym in a brynnand fyre,  
And thare he suld be brynt, but dowl,  
Bot gyff the rayne the fyre put owt.  
Sa Cyrus wyth his ost onone  
Fra he had wonnyn Babylone,  
Past in to Lydis tyll assayle  
This Cresus kyng wyttht playne batayle.  
Thare, eftyre mony juperdyis,  
And syndry changyd wyctoryis, 390  
The kyng off Lydis this Cresus  
Wes tane and broucht quyk tyll Cyrus,  
And he gert cast hym in a fyre,  
Off dry fagottis, brynnand schyre,  
Thare brynt he noucht bot tholyt payne,  
For it layit on sa fast off rayne  
On nakyne wys that he mycht bryne

All the tyme he lay thare in.  
 Off Pers than the kyng Cyrus  
 F. 51. b. Gert qwyte delyver this kyng Cresus. 400  
 Owt off that fyre, and be treté  
 Hym tyll hys restoryt he,  
 . Apon this wys quhen Cresus  
 Wes fre delyveryde fra Cyrus,  
 Tyll Phanwa, hys dochtyr dere,  
 He tauld the cas, and the manere,  
 And in his hert he had gret pryde  
 That [he] ethchapyt swa that tyde.  
 But scho that saw his hawtane fere,  
 Apon this wys maid hym awnsuere : 410  
 " Wyth slycht [swa], suppos yhe slyde,  
 Yhoure lattyre day yhit mon yhe byde :  
 Before that day on nakyn wys  
 Yhe suld yhoure fortown happy prys  
 For at the evin, or eftyr, ay  
 Men prysis ay the fayr day,  
 And quhen the lyffe off man tais end,  
 Than is tyme hym to comend."  
 And eftyre that scho had tauld hym thus,  
 Scho bad hym be ware that Cyrus, 420  
 At hym suld noucht sa grewyd be,  
 That he suld hang hym on a tre,  
 Quhare nevyre rayne wytht mekyll wete,  
 Na nakyn swn mycht sauff with het.

## CHAP. V.

*Now this Chapter sall tell  
How the dede off Cyrus fell.*

**E**FTYR that this kyng Cresus  
Wencust wes and wonnyne thus,  
Cyrus, lord and kyng off Pers,  
Off quham before I maid rehers,  
Past wyth his ost, as man off were,  
Oure Araxys, that rywere 430  
That on hewyd rynnand is  
Betwene Sytyke and Lydis;  
Dame Tarnys that tyme wes lady  
And quene regend all Sythy,  
And quhen scho hard that the gret ost  
Off Cyrus come bolnyd in bost,  
Hyr consale gave hyr to ger breke  
The bryggys, and alle the fwr dys stek,  
And let thame passage till have fre,  
Wytht swylk ane ost in hyr cwntré. 440  
How evyre hyr lykyd this consale,  
Scho gert bath bryg and fwrde be hale,  
And lete thame oure Araxis fre  
Wytht-in hyr land mak thaire entré,  
And in to straytis ner thare by  
Scho gert hyr sone be prewaly,  
Hys awantage for to se,  
And byd his opertwnyté,  
To dyffend or tyll assayle  
For werd is waverand off batayle. 450

And quhen Cyrus wes cumin in  
 F. 52. The land off Sytyke it to wyn,  
 For mete thaire forreowrys thai send  
 And pavillownys thai gert discend,  
 And thare tentis swne in hy,  
 Be lyklynes to mak herbry,  
 Trumpan all the day on hycht ;  
 Bot quhen it nere drew to the nycht  
 All thaire fyrys thai gert baulde,  
 As thai wald styll thaire herbry haulde, 460  
 Off wyne thai drwe and rostyd flesche,  
 And ete and drank thaim to refresche,  
 And syne dewoydid prewaly  
 And lete with[in] thare tentys ly  
 All thaire wytalle swa assayid,  
 As thai had yschyd all affrayid.  
 The Cytykys than that in the hicht  
 Had byddyn all the day quhill nycht,  
 Thought till haue fwndyn wnarayid  
 The Perseys hale and wnpurwayde, 470  
 And sa thai mycht thame best supprys  
 In slepe, or than sum othyr wys,  
 To tak or sla all at thare wylle,  
 All thus thaire purpos to fulfille.  
 The Sytykys come wyth thaire batayle  
 The Perseys derffly till assayle  
 Wytth-in thaire tentis, quhare thai thought  
 That all sulde at thaire wyll be wroucht.  
 Off [the] Perseis nane thai fand  
 Wytth-in the tentys than sterand, 480  
 For hale the ost removyde were,  
 As I yhowe tauld a lytill ere ;  
 Than thai Sytykys tuk herbry,

And ete and drank rycht gredyly  
 Off the wytayle that was assayid,  
 Thai tuk rycht fast and lytill payid ;  
 Bot or the gammyn wes all gane  
 Thai payid ma than twa for ane.  
 Wyne and flesche thai had at wylle,  
 Thar-off thai tuk sa gret a fyll, 490  
 That qwhene wyst thare-off his awine,  
 How mony acris he had sawyne,  
 Bot foryhet thame-self all qwyte  
 To drynk thai had sik appetyt,  
 That wnwachid, suddanly,  
 Thai fell on slepe rycht hewyly.  
 Off the Perseys than the spyis  
 Tauld tyll Cirus on quhat wyis  
 He mycht hys purpos welle fulfille,  
 And have the Sytykys at hys wylle, 500  
 For all tyme thai nere thaim ware,  
 And saw thare manere and thare fayre.

Wyth that the Perseys hastily  
 Arayid thame, and come suddanly,  
 And fand the Sytykys all lyand  
 Wytght-in thare tentis still slepand ;  
 F. 52. b. Thar thai thaime stekid in thare slepe,  
 And slwe thame downe as thai war schepe,  
 That few echapyd fra that place  
 To tell all how it hapnyd was ; 510  
 The Qwenys swn in to that stede,  
 And in that pres, was slayne to dede,  
 That yhong and avinnand was, and fayre,  
 And till his Modyre nerest ayre  
 Off all the landis off Sithy ;  
 For-thi the barnage was sary



Off his ded ; and nevyrtheles  
 His Modyre tuk wp sik stoutnes  
 And dissymlyd sorow swyn,  
 And hyr arayid wyttht-outyn hwne, 520  
 Wyth hyr ost in bataylis sere,  
 And waytand quhar the Perseys were,  
 And hyr awantage for to se  
 How best scho mycht revengyd be.  
 Hyr ost scho scalyd here and thaire,  
 Lyk as scho affrayid ware,  
 And lete the Perseys wyttht thare pryde  
 Hyr land oure ryot and oure ryde,  
 Bot nere scho perswyde ay,  
 Quhill at the last [up]on a day 530  
 Scho saw thame in tha straytys thare,  
 Quhare all hyre ost abowt thame ware,  
 And scho than in hyr buschement,  
 That thought to cum tyll hyr intent,  
 Gert trumpe wp, and suddanly  
 Brak on the Perseys hawtaynly,  
 Wyttht all hyr ost on ilk[a] syde,  
 Sa wmbeset thai ware that tyde  
 Wyttht the Sytykys that nane mycht  
 Fra the bataile ta the flycht, 540  
 Bot on nede behuwyd to byd ;  
 Thaire thai layid on ilk syde,  
 And sa fell thare was the fycht,  
 That mony doure to dede wes dycht,  
 Mony a hawberk, mony a scheld,  
 Was all to frwschyd left in felde,  
 Bot the Sytykys douchtely  
 Wan all hale the wycory.  
 Twa hundyr thousand thai fand dede

Off Perseys lyand in that sted ; 550

The kyng Cyrus off Pers that day

Wes slayne, [and] thare amang thame lay,

The Qweyne that thoucht this mellé gude,

A fat gert fill full off thare blude,

That slayne in to that feld than lewyde,

And syne gert stryk off Cyrus hewyde,

And that fat gert swayk it in,

“ Drynk thi fill now or thow blyn,

Scho sayd, “ for thretty yhere and mare

F. 53.

Ay mannys blud thow thurstyd sare ; 560

Thare thow nowe may fynd thi fill,

Drynk or lewe, quethyr evyre thow wylle.”

Eftyr that Cyrus slayne wes,

Hys swn succedyt, Cambises,

He movyd in tyll Egipt were,

And rade it throucht wyth gret powere,

Thare all thare templys he kest downe,

And wndyde thare religiowne,

And at thare awld ceremonyis,

That thai oysid on syndry wyis

570

In to thare devotyown,

He had abhomynatyown.

Twa spaymen syne put hym to dede,

And thai succedyt in his stede.

And maid thame kyngis off [the] land,

At thare lykyn it sterand,

Syne Darius ras thame agayne,

And haŵe thai bath in batayle slayne.

## CHAP. VI.

How Darius throw his secudry  
 His discumft in Sithy.

FOUR hundyr wyntyr and thris twenty,  
 Or God wes borne off oure Lady, 580  
 Consentand all the barnage hale,  
 Darius tuk the governale  
 Off all Pers in propirté,  
 And ryngnyd in gret reawté.  
 Quhen he recoveryd had Assyry  
 And Babilone all halily,  
 Agayne the kyng Amprityre,  
 Off Sythy bath lord and syre,  
 He rasyd ost and moſwyd were,  
 And come on hym wytht his powere, 590  
 For caus Amprityre the kyng  
 Off Sythy maid hym playne warnyng  
 Off his douchtyr till be his wyff,  
 Quhen he hyr askyd for this stryff,  
 And this were Schyre Darius  
 Movyd wpon Amprityrus.  
 The ost off Pers wes namyd then  
 Seſwyn hundyre thousand armyd men,  
 That for the lust off a body  
 Wes set all in tyll jwperdy. 600  
 And oft in tyll gret dowl off dede,  
 [And] all dyspayrid off remed ;  
 For as thai throuch the land past,  
 The Sytykys handlyd thame sa fast,

Constayand thame on ilk[a] syde,  
 That nane durst fra the batayle byd,  
 That the Sytykys mycht oure-ta,  
 F. 53. b. Than thai walde thame, but rawnsone, sla.  
 And swa, be syndry juperdyis,  
 Fourty thousand reknyd twyis 610  
 Darius myssid off his men,  
 Wytht juperdiis that slayne ware then,  
 And hym-self all prewaly  
 Fled off the kynrike off Sythy,  
 For drede thai suld be[hynd] hym stek  
 The furdys, and [the] bryggys brek  
 Off Danoy, that gret rywere,  
 That marchand is to Sythy nere ;  
 And off the skayth that he had tane,  
 He maid bot lytill dule or mayne, 620  
 And thought that tynsall was bot smalle  
 For to rekyn his costys all :  
 Yhit wes he noucht off litill mycht,  
 That swa mony couth gar dycht,  
 Apon a day in till a felde,  
 Off wycht men wapnys for to welde,  
 As Darius tynt in tyll Sithy  
 Throuch his hawtane succuddry.  
 Throucht Asy syne he past onone  
 Quhen he had dantid Macedone, 630  
 Yonas nere by the se,  
 Wytht his nawyne warrayde he,  
 And the Attenyens hale  
 Ras to ma thame suppowalle,  
 For-thi this Darius movid his were,  
 Agaynis thame wytht hale powere ;  
 And thai thame purwayd off diffens,

And mad agayne thame resistens,  
 And wytth thare awyne cumpany  
 And sowdyowrys off Spertany, 640  
 Ellewyn thousand men, but mare,  
 In to the feld assemblyd ware  
 Agayne sex hundyre thousand hale,  
 Off Perseys ordanyd for batale ;  
 In to that fycht Myltiades  
 Off Attenyens [a] chyftane was.  
 Bath thai ostys swne onone  
 In to the feld off Maratone  
 Togyddyr mellayd hastily,  
 Bot off thare fychtyng wes ferly ; 650  
 For quha that nere had by thaim bene,  
 Thai mycht the ta part welle haue sene  
 In batayle derffly men slaand,  
 The tothyr as bestys thare deand ;  
 Twa hundyre [thowsand] Perseys thare  
 Slayne in the feld fundyn ware.  
 Darius swa thare discumfyte  
 Chasid fled till his schippys tyte,  
 And wytth his nawyne in affray  
 Wnslayne echapyd as that day 660  
 In tyll hys land off Pers, and thare  
 Assemblyd swne [a] gret poware  
 In tyll intent for tyll have bene  
 Revengyd off his fayis kene,  
 Bot in hys ost he deyde, off cas,  
 And swa his purpos falyhyd was.

F. 54.

## CHAP. VII.

*This Chaptere tellis how Ferres,  
Darius sone, discumft was.*

FOURE hundyre yhere sevynty and sewyn,  
 Or Mary bare the Kyng off Hewyn,  
 Quhen Darius, as yhe hard, wes dede,  
 Hys son Cerces [Xerxes] in his stede 670  
 In Pers succedyt kyng regnand,  
 And governyd wytht his lauch the land,  
 And that were held wpe fyve yhere,  
 That his fadyr in Grece gert stere.  
 In tyll his ost off Perseys then  
 He had sevyn hundyre thousand men,  
 At all poynt armyd clenly ;  
 Thre hundyre thousand he had by  
 Off wagyouris armyd at all rycht,  
 In to thare gere all flawmand brycht ; 680  
 Twelff hundyre schyppys gret off toure,  
 And off les thre thousand oure,  
 Wyth men and wytaile thare gert he  
 Be stuffyd welle, and layd to se ;  
 His gret ost swa assemblid thare  
 Dowtyd gyff ony wattrys ware,  
 Off sic abowndans, and sic plente,  
 That to thame all thare drynk mycht be,  
 Or to thare bataylle for to pas,  
 Ony erde to large was, 690  
 Or tyll thare nawyne ony se  
 Mycht rowme enuch or large be,

Sic ane ost yhe may welle trow  
 Is were for to be gaddyrt nowe  
 Than it was than, for to supprys  
 Be batayle or be juperdyis.

Off Spartany, Leonydes  
 Kyng and lord in that tyme wes,  
 He wytth aucht thousand men that quhyllle  
 Bade in the straytis off Termopylle. 700  
 Quhen Cerces thare-off hade tythyng  
 In tyll dispyt and pure hething,  
 That sa few for thare defens  
 Durst mak agayne hym resistens,  
 He gert aray his gret batayle,  
 In purpos thaim for tyll assayle;  
 Bot thaim he sped before onone  
 That in the feld off Maratone  
 In tyll his fadyre tyme had bene,  
 And thare thaire frendys slayne had seue, 710  
 F. 54. b. For tyll assayle thare inymys  
 Wyth batayll, or wytth juperdyis.

Off tha schortly for to tell,  
 As in the fycht the fortoune felle;  
 The begynnyng thai ware hale,  
 And off that fycht the fyrst tynsalle.  
 Syne the grete ost wytth Cerces.  
 Sone to the baytell cummyn wes,  
 And wmbeset on ilk[a] syde  
 The Spartany and Leonyde. 720  
 Than ras the fycht bath fers and felle,  
 And all the batail rycht cruelle,  
 Thare men mycht here bot dusche for dusch,  
 Rappys royd wytth mony a rusch,  
 Mony a penowne, mony a spere,

To rewyn, and all to fruschyd were.  
 On basnetys, schynand brycht,  
 Men mycht se pollaxis lycht,  
 Thare morel bayard, dun and gray,  
 Wyth wowndys flyngand ran away. 730

In to sic pres, wytth-owtyn dowl,  
 The fychtyng thre dayis lestyd owt,  
 But trew takyn, or departyng,  
 Or ony kyn othire ameyssyng,  
 That nane off bak the flycht mycht ta,  
 Na nane mycht pas to purches ma.  
 Thai war in to that fycht so thyke  
 That nane had nymbilnes to stryke,  
 And [sa] for-tyryd in to that thrawe,  
 That quheyne had cume his eynde to drawe, 740  
 Off slayne bodyis fundyn thare,  
 Hepys hey wpstandand ware.  
 That quha that had thame that tyme sene  
 Wald noucht have trowid at thai had bene  
 Twa bataillis off sere natyownys,  
 As happynys betwene regyownys,  
 Bot off all kyn natyoune,  
 Pestilens, or ded felowne.

The ferd day quhen Leonyda  
 Swa wyth his fayis he [wes] set sa 750  
 He callyd till hym his wageoures,  
 His freyndis, and his sowdeoures,  
 Out off the pres off the bataylle  
 And sayd, "I gyve yowe for counsaile,  
 That yhe remoŵe owt off the fycht  
 And drawis youe till yhone hill on hicht,  
 Youe to refresche and ta the ayre,  
 And at owre nede syne yhe repayre



Fra that yhe refreschyd be,  
 For bettyr yhit I thynk to se; 760  
 And I wyll wyttht my Spartaneyys  
 Prowe sum othir juperdyis;  
 Suppos I happyn to be slayne,  
 And for to de in to the payne,  
 For it is myn honest det  
 F. 55. For my land my lyff to set,  
 And off my-self to be rekles,  
 Quhyll I have gottyn my land in pes;  
 Na I prys, na payne apere  
 Myn honowre and my land to were. 770  
 For-thi, to yhow my falowys hale  
 Now I gywe for playne consayle,  
 That in lang home yhe hovyr noucht,  
 Bot on youre wyschye set yhoure thoucht,  
 And set yhoure lyff in juperdy,  
 For tyll supprys youre inymy;  
 Na biddis noucht the dayis lycht,  
 Na yhoure fays quhill thai be dycht;  
 Bot on the nycht gywe we can se  
 That the hape mycht owrys be, 780  
 Wyttht-in thaire tentis quhar thai ly  
 Cum we on thame [than] suddanly,  
 For swa slepand best we may  
 Put tham in sa hard assay  
 That, but perell, ma sall de  
 Than sall be boune to fycht or fle,  
 And oure renowne may nevyre be  
 Commendyde off mare honesté  
 Than to be fundyn togyddyr all,  
 How sa ewyr the fortowne falle, 790  
 Amang oure fays wyttht-in thare tentis,

Thaire pavilyhownys, or thare buschementis ;  
 For honowr awis ws till assaille,  
 And awenture may oft awaille  
 And prowes pynys all perelle,  
 And eftyr hope hape hapnys quhille.  
 Than swa sall gret oppynyownys  
 Mak for ws excusatyownys,  
 And we sall sawffyd be fra blame,  
 And sall welle defend oure fame." 800

To this thai assentyd hale,  
 And wrocht all eftyre his consaille,  
 And gert thaire spyis tak gud kepe,  
 Quhen that the Perseys fell on slepe  
 Wytth-in thare tentis quhare thai lay.  
 To this schortly for to say  
 Leonyde wytth his company  
 Come on the Perseys suddanly,  
 Quhen thai ware sadly fallyn on slepe,  
 And stekyd thame as thai ware schepe, 810  
 That sum wytth wowndys waknyd ware,  
 And sum thare gaspand granyd sare,  
 And sum thare stekyd stakarand stud,  
 And sum lay bullyrrand in thaire blude,  
 All thus in wodnes as thai waveryd  
 And stekyd swa wyth stokis staveryd,  
 F. 55. b. The Perseyis ilkane stekyd othire,  
 Sparand nothire fadyre na brodyre ;  
 For thai war off sic multitude,  
 And swa thyk togyddyr stude, 820  
 That nane mycht mys quhare he wald mynt,  
 Tha nane to dede gave doubill dynt,  
 And mony smoryd losyde the lyff,  
 Wyth-outyn strak off swerde or knyff.

The Spartans wyth-outyn chas  
 Thare fays all wencust in that plas,  
 For fra the glomyng off the nycht  
 Till on the morne, quhill day wes lycht,  
 And ane howre wes eftyre none  
 Gane fully, or the fycht was done. 830

Quhen that the Kyng off Pers was soucht  
 And fundyn in the feld wes noucht.  
 Sex hundyr thousand Perseys thare,  
 In to that felde dede fundyn ware,  
 Discumfyde in that juperdy  
 Wytth sex hundyr anyrly  
 Off Spartans, that in that tyde  
 To batell come wyth Leonyde,  
 That slayne in to that batell wes.  
 Thus discumfyt wes Cerces, 840  
 And as on nede than hym behuwyd,  
 Till his schippis he hym remuwyde,  
 And wytth his nawyne than thought he  
 That all Grece suld dystroyd be.

In to that tyme Temystocles  
 Off the Attenyens chyftane wes,  
 The Yonyis quhen he saw hale  
 In tyll Cerces suppowalle,  
 And had his flot in governyng,  
 Syne, for thare caus, off Pers the kyng, 850  
 Darius, the fadyre off this Cerces.  
 Agayne Atenys mowid wes,  
 Sa thai ware caus pryncipalle  
 Off all this were, and this batale,  
 For hale the Atteneyis  
 Wytth [the] Yonyis, in thare defens,  
 Agayne Darius ras off were,

Quharefore he moʷyd his powere  
 Agayne the Atteneyis,  
 That mayd sa manly resistens, 860

Quhill in Maratone on a day  
 Slayne twa hundyr thousand lay.  
 Thare chyftane this Temystocles,  
 That saw how all this cummyn wes,  
 Set hale his slycht and his quentis  
 For to trete wytth thir Yonyis.

For hym worthyt to forbere,  
 As oys is amang men off were,  
 Entyrcomunyng in[til a] bille,  
 He wrate his consale and his wille, 870  
 And said, " Me thynk yhe ar to blame,

F. 56. That negligent ar off yhoure fame,  
 Set yhe wyll wyth yhoure conscience,  
 Ay for yhoure statis ma defence.  
 Yhit it is gret crualte  
 Rekles off yhoure fame to be,  
 For honoure tholys confusyowne,  
 And revery rewys thare resowne,  
 And wyt wytth wyle thare yhe supprys  
 And honesté defowlyt lyis. 880

Off kyndnes tharefor set yhoure thought,  
 And thynk for yhowe quhat we haʷe wroucht  
 In Maratone, apon a day,  
 Quhar slayne twa hundyre thousand lay,  
 And how oure frendys off Spartany,  
 For yhoure caus hallyly,  
 In till oure suppowale ras,  
 And how thaire kyng Leonidas  
 Now in to this later fycht,  
 Sex hundyr thousand on a nycht 890

Wyttht sex hundyre men has slayne.  
 In till gret pres, thrang, and payne,  
 And Leonyde alsua slayne wes thare,  
 That Spartane rew may evermare.

And nowe the kyng off Pers, Cerces,  
 That fra that fycht echapyt wes  
 In till yhoure gret flot, apon Se,  
 All affrayid has tane entré,  
 For-thi, yhe qwytt ws this kyndnes,  
 That quhen yhe se ws set in pres, 900  
 And owt off hawyn yhoure schyppis be  
 Yhe change luffe, and turne to Se,  
 And lat ws wyth oure fayis fycht  
 Qubill that oure goddys dele the rycht."  
 This was his consaille and his wylle,  
 And he gert wryt and clos in bile,  
 And till a stane that wes nere by,  
 Quhare that he wyst rycht werraly  
 The Yonyis wald swne arrywe,  
 He gert it festnyde be belywe. 910

The Amerale swne land has tane  
 And saw this bill wpon the stane,  
 Fra he it red, he wyst it wes  
 The cownsaile off Temystocles.  
 In hast his erand all dyde he,  
 And sped hym sone syne to the se;  
 Temystocles yhit thare abade  
 And off thaire schyppys wonnyn had,  
 And lay arayid wyttht his ost,  
 Ay purvayde for to kepe the cost. 920  
 Artymodor, than lady  
 And queyne off Halycarnasy,  
 In the suppowale off Cerces,

Brak on this Temystocles  
 Owt off hyr buschement quhare scho lay,  
 F. 56. b. And made rycht stout and hard assay,  
 And wurschype prowyde, and manhade,  
 Among the cheffe off his knychthade.  
 Thare woman wyle in wyt off man,  
 And manhade turnyd in woman. 930  
 For thare off newe scho rasyt the fycht  
 Quhare mony dowre to dede wes dycht;  
 The wyctory yhit, nevertheles,  
 Fell all to Temystocles,  
 For thare slayne wes that lady,  
 And nere all hale hyr company,  
 That lypnyd all that Cerces kyng  
 Suld land have tane in thaire helpyng,  
 Wyttht all the ost off his nawyne:  
 Bot, be the consalle, and kuvine, 940  
 And queyntyse off Temystocles,  
 All othire wayis thare fortowne wes;  
 For all the Yonyis rycht,  
 As thai the fors saw off the fycht,  
 Turnyd the luff, and tuk the Se;  
 Than Cerces in perplexité  
 Wes hard set, and his nawyne  
 Come noucht yhit al till esy syne,  
 For as fraward stormys stude  
 Mony drownyd in the flude, 950  
 And mony etchepyd for radnes,  
 Fra that the kyng anoyid wes,  
 And mony als wes tane off were  
 Wyth the Attenyens and thare powere.  
 Than off Pers, Mardonius,  
 That saw his kyng reboytid thus,

Till hym said, " I rede that yhe  
 Set yhowe for yhoure sauffte,  
 For here we thole now sa gret schame,  
 That I dowt ware to fynd at hame, 960  
 And or it swa suld hapyn thare,  
 In till yhoure land I wald yhe ware,  
 Levand all yhoure ost wyth me,  
 And swa, how-evyr oure fortowne be,  
 I sall, apon sik awyis,  
 Hald off were oure inymyis,  
 That we sall welle excus oure name,  
 And yhe sall sauffe be fra defame."

To the counsalle off Mardone  
 Cerces trowyd sone onone, 970  
 And delyveryd hym his men,  
 And made hym oure thame all cheften.  
 Thare, that kyng that fyrst gert byg,  
 Wytht schyppys, oure the flud a brige  
 Wyth [fewe than] off his cumpany,  
 Away than lurkyd prewaly,  
 In till a litill fysch scowte  
 For pres that he wes in, and dowte,  
 And wyntyrr weddrys felle and grete  
 Lowsyd all his bryg off threte 980  
 And off the serwys off a man

F. 57. Off neyde he held hym payid than,  
 Quhare befor he gert the se  
 For his schyppys lowrand be,  
 For fawte off rowme his mekyll mycht  
 Kest down hillys hey on hycht,  
 And wyth the waleis evyn thai made  
 To schawe his ost quhare that thai raide,  
 To scant all rynnand ryverys were

For to be drynk till his powere. 990  
 All kynd off thyng than falyhyde hym nere,  
 As infortowne maid hym off stere,  
 All his futmen and archerys,  
 That lypnyd ware to thaire lederys,  
 For dowte hungyr and trawaylle,  
 Begowth fayntly for to faylle  
 And bolne, quhyll at the last, the dede  
 Consumyd thame wyth-owt remede.  
 All the landys as thai lay  
 Mycht na man nere thame pas the way, 1000  
 Than for to bryst than wald thai thynke,  
 The ayre sa fell was off the stynek;  
 The fowlis wyld and bestis fell  
 That couth off karyowne fele the smelle,  
 That fey court ay folowyd nere,  
 Quhill deand at thai fallyn were,  
 And off thare fleysch wald fill thame thare,  
 Or fullily all dede thai ware.  
 Quhen Cerses thus to Mardone gave  
 Off his ost all hale the lawe 1010  
 That remanyd hale wnslayne,  
 His [emys] sone mad hym sa fayne  
 That he hym put in pres sa fast,  
 Quhill he defowlyde wes at the last.  
 The Grekis mony discumfyte,  
 And wan the castell off Olmyte,  
 And the Attenyens besyly  
 He trefyde wyth his industry,  
 And led thame in to hope off pes,  
 Quhill that he sawe thare fredowme wes 1020  
 Off sic mycht, and sic powere,  
 That wonnyn thai mycht be noucht off were.



Off thare cyté than in ire

A gret part he brynt in fyre.

In Boecy wytth his powere

He past syne, as man off were,

Off Grekis ane hundyre thousand hale

All welle arayid for batelle,

Folowyd forsy this Mardone

And gaue hym batale swne onone

1030

And wytth hym faucht in fycht sa fast

Quhill thai hym wencust at the last,

And all his ost thare nere was slayne;

Wnese hym-selff wyth mekyll payne,

Etchapyde owt off that mellé

F. 57. b.

All nakyd, wytth a few menyhe,

In swate all drawkyd, as thai were

Ane awlde schypbrokyn marynere.

Hys pavilyhownys and his tentys wes

Stuffyd welle wytth gret ryches

1040

Off the kyngis tresowre hale,

And othir that [dede] wes in the bataylle

Left gold and jowelys in copy,

And als wyth othir industry.

The kyng Cerses tresoure wan

Fra that fyrst the were began

Tyll that day that he fled, for-dowte,

In till a litill fyschare scowte.

All this Mardone had that day,

That fra the fycht [he] fled away.

1050

This tresoure all the Grekis gat

And delt it amang thame eftyre that;

Swa throuch the partyng off that pray,

And the tresoure delt that day,

The gold off Pers in sic copy

Wes the confusiowne halily  
 Off all Grece, that before that day  
 Governyd thame wytth wertu ay.  
 And that day Mardonyus  
 In Boecy wes wencust thus,  
 A gret part off the ost of Pers,  
 In Asy, as I herd rehers,  
 Wes discumfyt wpon [the] Se,  
 And put till hard perplexyté.

1060

Here-efter quhen the kyng Cerses  
 In till his awyn land cummyn wes,  
 Sa ille commendyt thare was he,  
 And lakyde all wytth his menyhe,  
 That schortly thare, the suth to say,  
 In tyll hys halle, apon a day,  
 The burdys wndyr clathis sete,  
 And wyschyn he had to ga to mete,  
 Hys stwart maid on hym a schote,  
 And tyte hym dowrly be the throte,  
 And wyth a knyff, wp to the hefft,  
 He steykyl hym quhyll the lyff he lefft.  
 This wes the endyng off Cerses,

1070

In all tyme that wnhappy wes.  
 As Oros quhille, the clerk sa fyne,  
 Wrat till his mastyre Saynt Awstyn,  
 Wndyre thire kyngis thre off Pers,  
 The quhilkis yhe herd me last rehers,  
 Reknyd wes off dede bodyis  
 A hundyre thousand nynty syis,  
 All off Perseis slayne downe,  
 And off nane othire natyowne.

1080

Quhen Cerses wes endyt thus  
 His swne succedyt, Daryus,

The quhilk in Alexandrys dayis  
 Endyt, as the story sayis. 1090  
 F. 58. Nowe off my purpos to mak ende,  
 Off Pers the storys I suspend.

## CHAP. VIII.

In this Chaptere ghe sall here,  
 Qwhen the Scottis beset be Þeychtis were.

FOUR hundyr vyntyre and fyfty 1093  
 And twa to rekyn oure evynlykly  
 Befor the [blest] Natyvvyté,  
 Oute off Athenys that cyté  
 To Rome the Lawis broucht ware then  
 Wryttyn in till Tablis ten.  
 The Romanys yhit eftyre tha

Cotton, F. 37. b.

## CHAP. VIII.

[From MSS. C., E. I., etc.]

This next Chapter folowande heyre,  
 Tellis qwhen Scottis and Þeychtis were.

FOUR hundyr wyntyre and fourty †1093  
 And twa, to rekkyn ewynly,  
 Befor the blest Natywyté,  
 Out of Athenys that cité  
 To Rome the Lawis broucht war then  
 Wryttyn in to Tabillis ten,  
 The Romanys yhit eftyr tha

To thame ekyd Tablis twa. 1100

As in oure storys wryttyn is,  
Than in Scotland the Scottis  
Begouth to rengen, and to steren,  
Twa hundyr full and fourty yhere  
Fyve wyntyr and monethis thre,  
Gyve that all suld rekynd be,  
Or the Peychtis in Scotland  
Come, and in it wes duelland.

And now to thai I turne my stille,  
Off thare lynage to spek a quhille, 1110  
As in the Thryd Buke wes before,  
Fra Symon-Brek tyll Fergus-More,  
Is, as the Scottis lynyaly  
Come downe off Yrschery.  
Quhare than I left, nowe to begyn,  
Thare namys here I will tak in.

---

To thaim ekyt Tabillis twa. †1100

As in oure story wryttyn is,  
Than in Scotlande the Scottys  
Begouth to regne, and to steren,  
Twa hundyr fully and fourty yhere  
Fyve wyntyr and monethis thre,  
Giff that al sulde reknyt be,  
Or the Peychtis in Scotlande  
Coyme, and in it was regnande.

Bot I wil noucht tell yow thar nayme,  
Thar condiscion, na thar fayme, †1110  
For possibile supposse it be,  
Difficile yit it is to me  
To tel thar namys distynctly

He that wes callyd Fergus-More,  
 In the Thrid Buke yhe hard before,  
 Wes Fergus-Erthswne, that thre yhere  
 Made hym beyhond the Drwm to stere, 1120  
 Oure all the hychtis evyrilkane,  
 As thai ly fra Drwmalbane  
 Tyll Stanmore and Inchevall,  
 Kyng he mad hym oure thaim all.

Dongart his swn yheris fyve  
 Wes till his fadyre successywe.  
 Congal, Dongarddis swne, twenty yhere  
 And twa wes kyng wytth-owtyn were.

Gowran, Dongarddis swne, allswa  
 Regnyd twenty yhere and twa. 1130  
 Conal nest hym Makcongall

Or al thar greis severelly  
 That befor the Peychtis rasse ;  
 For as our story mencion mays  
 Fergus Erschson the fyrst man  
 Was that in our lande began,  
 Befor that tyme that the Peychtis  
 Our kynrik wan fra the Scottis, † 1120  
 And syne tha Peychtis regnande were  
 A thousande ane and sixty yhere.

And fra this Fergus, doun be lyne  
 Discendande ewyn, was Makalpyn  
 Kenyaucht, that was aucht hundyr yhere  
 And thre and fourty passit cleyr  
 Eftyr the blest Natywite  
 Or regnande he begouythe to be  
 Fra the Peychtis was put out.

Fourtene yhere held thai landis all

Thretty wyntyr and foure than  
Edan regnyd Makgowran.

Hecgedbwd sex yhere and ten  
Kyng wes in tha landis then.

[K]ynachker Makcolnal  
Thre moneth held thai landis all.

Ferchar Makcowny sextene yhere  
As kyng couth all thai landis stere.

1140

Downald Brec son [of] Hecgedbowde,  
Kyng wes fourtene wyntyr prowde.

F. 58. b.

And eftyr that his dayis wes dwn,  
Maldowny, Dolnawde Downyswne,  
Sextene wyntyr kyng wes hale.

And nest hym tuk that governale  
Ferchar-Fodys sone, and was than

The tende man, wyth-outtyn dout,  
Was Keynauche Makalpyne  
Fra this Fergus ewyn be lyne,  
And sa thir ten sulde occupy,  
Gif al war reknyt, fullely

† 1130

Twelf hundyr wynter, and weil ma,  
Bot I can noucht consaif it swa  
Bot that this Fergus was regnande  
Wyth the Peychtis in Scotlande,  
And tha ten that regnande were  
Eftyr this Fergus, yhere be yhere,  
As thai that the Cornykill wrate,  
In til nowmyr set the date,  
Amang the Peychtis was regnande  
Wyth-in the Kynrik of Scotland,

† 1140

Twenty wynter kyng and ane.

Hecgede-Monavele-Makdongat  
Downad-Brec sone eftyre that 1150  
Regnyd twelfe yhere fullyly.

Her I suspende this Geneology ;  
Bot I wyll spek mare thareoff swne,  
Quhen all the lawe till it is dwne.

And liffit in bargan and in were  
Qwhil Kenyach rase with his powere.

Gif othir, of mare sufficians,  
Can fynde bettyr accordance,  
This buk at likyn thai may mende,  
Bot I now schortly, to mak ende, † 1150  
Thynkis for to set thar date,  
As Cornykleris befor me wrate,  
And kest and reknyt, yhere be yhere,  
As the Peychtis regnande were,  
And thar dait sa set I wil  
Qwhen the processe is lede thartil.

## CHAP. IX.

Of Brynnyns now schall yhe here  
Rede in to this Chapitre.

**F**OURE hundyr thretty yhere and sewyn  
Or Mary bare the Kyng off Hewyn,  
The Vegentys all war wonnyn qwyte,  
And throucht the Romaynys discumfyte.  
Than Brynnyns wytth the men of Sauns,

That is a lordschipe gret in Frauns, 1160  
All Rome off were nere wonnyn had,  
Na had bene, that a gannyr made  
Sa hwge crakyng and sic cry,  
That the Romanys suddanly  
Waknyd, quhare thai slepand lay :  
All the cyté than fand thai  
Wytht thare fays nere wptane,  
To sauffe the Capitele allane.  
And that yhet Brennyus wonnyn had,  
Had noucht that gus sic crakyng mad, 1170  
That waknyd the wachis suddanly,  
And warnyd the Romanys hastily.  
    This Brennyus and Belyne  
Bredyre ware, and knychtis syne :  
Off thame quha will the certane haŵe,  
How that thai for Bretane straŵe  
Ilkane wytht othir, and for it faucht ;  
And how thaire modyre made thaim saucht ;  
How thai wan Frauns, and Lumbardy,  
Tuskane, and Rome nere halily ; 1180  
How Brennyus syne left in Tuskane,  
And Belyne come hame in Bretane ;  
Thai rede the Brwte, and thai sall se  
Ferlys gret off thare bownté.  
Saynt Awstynne sayis the Romanys ware  
To geys dettyd in honowre mare  
Than to thare goddis all, that slepyd,  
Quhen geys thame wytht thare crakyng kepyd.



## CHAP. X.

Off a Pestilens that fell,  
And how in Rome men mycht se helle.

F. 59.

THRE hundyr yhere foure score and sevyn  
Before that borne was the Kyng off Hewyn, 1190  
In to the stede off Consules  
In Rome Tribuny chosyn wes.  
The Romanys than wan a cyté  
That callyd wes, that tyme, Penestré,  
And aucht cyteis than off were  
To Rome wes maid tributere.  
Grete pestilens in to tha dayis  
In Rome fell, as Frere Martyne sayis:  
Wytht-in the myddis off the towne  
All the erd than opnyd down, 1200  
Sa wgsun thare that opynnyng fell  
That, throuch a ryfft, men mycht sé hell,  
And off the stynk come off that stede  
Mony wytht-in the towne wes dede.  
Wytht-in the cyté wes a man  
That callyd be name wes Martyne than,  
He till his goddis mad prayere  
To gyff hym wyt, on quhat manere  
And how, that exalatyowne,  
That made sa gret infectiowne, 1210  
Mast hastily mycht closyd be,  
And how to succoure that cyté  
Mast redy helpe war, or defens,  
For that fellowne pestilens.

Hys goddys hym ansuerd, at the last,  
And bad hym gang, and arme hym fast,  
And at that ryfft lepe evyn down,  
Gyff that he thocht to sauff the towne.  
At that answer he yhed swne,  
And hastyly as thai bad has dwne, 1220  
And fra he downe fell in that gape,  
All that ryfft togyddyre crape;  
And sa was sauffyde the cyté  
Fra stynk than, and mortalité.

Brennyus yhit all tyme then  
Warrayid, wyttht the Frankyis men,  
The Romanys in to thai dayis,  
And, as Frer Martyne tharoff sayis,  
A Romane sawe a Frankys man  
Abowt his hals thare haue than, 1230  
Off gold thrawyn, all lyk a les;  
This Romane made than sic purches,  
That [al]anyrly bot thai twa  
Togyddyr suld in bataille ga,  
And on na wys than suld thai twyn  
Quhill ane mycht the tothir wyn,  
Slayne or yhowdyn in batale,  
Wytht-owt ony [othir] suppowale  
Off ony othir; as it fell than,  
This Roman slewe the Frankis man, 1240  
And fra his nek in tyll that place  
Tyt away that goldyn las,  
And pwt it abowt hys awyn hals;  
Fra thine he, and his lynage als,  
In to Latyne callid were  
Lasyd Romanys mony yhere.

## CHAP. XI.

When Alysandyr, the mychty kyng,  
 Begouth to ryse and mak sterphng.

THRE hundyr and sex and twenty yhere  
 Before the byrth off oure Lord dere,  
 Alysandyr Phylippy,  
 That gotyn was on Olympy, 1250  
 Be herytabill successiowne,  
 Begouth [to] regne in Macydowne,  
 And wes bot yheris twelf off eelde  
 Quhen [he] begouth wapnys to weelde,  
 And regnand lyvyd bot twelff yhere  
 Quhen all the Oryent he wan nere,  
 And hale syne set his intent  
 Tyll have wonnyn the Occydent;  
 Bot thareoff falyhyd he, off cas,  
 In Babylone he poysownyd was. 1260  
 Off his douchty dedys sere  
 Contenyd in othir bukis eere;  
 Tharfore in this Tretis I  
 Now wyll our-ga thame mar lychtly.  
 The Romanys than grewe off mycht,  
 And wes in dedys stout and wycht;  
 The Sampnytys than, that in mydway  
 Betwene Poyle and Chawmpayne lay,  
 And in to swylk abowndans wes  
 Off sylvyr, gold, and [of] ryches, 1270  
 That all the armowris that thai had  
 Wes off gold and sylvyr made;  
 Thir Sampnytys than ras all hale

Agayne [the] Romanys in batale,  
 Bot the Sampnytys, sone and tyte,  
 Wes wyth the Romanys discumfyte,  
 And eftyre syne, with thare powere,  
 The Romanys discumfyt were ;  
 Bot the Romanys, at the last,  
 Wyttht the Sampnytys faucht sa fast, 1280  
 That foure and twenty thousand lay  
 Slayne in the feyld apone a day,  
 Off the Sampnytys, and thare kyng  
 Was takyn thaire in that fechtynge.  
 Thare chymys and thare cheffe towne  
 Than to the grownd wes castyn downe,  
 Thare was na fa in feyld sa felle  
 Agayne Rome than, na sa cruelle,  
 As wes the Sampnytys in tha dayis,  
 As Oros and Frere Martyne sayis; 1290  
 And the caus wes pryncipall  
 Of that were, and off that batalle,  
 That for [of] Chawmpayne all the land  
 [Was] in profytis all hawbondand,  
 And esyly set to the se  
 Wyttht hawynnys gud in gret plente ;  
 Swa that alkyn marchandyis  
 Come in it apone syndry wyis.  
 F. 60. Thare cheffe cyté, off gret fame,  
 Capuva wes callyd be name, 1300  
 That to Cartage or to Rome wes  
 Paryfyid in all liklynes.  
 Thir landys the Romanys thought  
 Tyll thare oys suld haue bene brought ;  
 Thare-fore fyrst ras all this were  
 And endyt as yhe herd langere.

## CHAP. XII.

*How the Tarentinis hale  
Agayne the Romanys mobyt battalle.*

THRE hundyre yhere and thrys thre  
 Befor the [blissit] Natyvyte,  
 The Tarentynys wytht thare powere,  
 Agayne the Romanys ras off were : 1310  
 Thaire messyngere dyssatwysly  
 Thai defoulyde wnhonestly,  
 And warnyst thame rycht welle wyth-oute  
 Wytht all thare marcharys thame abowte,  
 And send for Pyrrus oure the Se,  
 For kyng off Grece that tyme wes he.  
 He broucht wytht hym off fwt men  
 Foure schore off thousand reknyd then,  
 And sewyn thousand men on hors,  
 Fayre off fassowne and off cors, 1320  
 And elephantys full twenty,  
 Quhare nevyr nane in Ytaly  
 Wes kend, na sene, before that day.  
 In batale sone, the suth to say,  
 Thai mellayid and faucht rycht fast,  
 The Tarentynis wes at the last  
 Hale discumfyte in that stede,  
 Wytht all thare ost ; than Pyrrus fiede  
 Wytht mekyll schame attoure the se,  
 In till his land wyth his menyhe. 1330  
 Than the Tarentynis hale  
 Soucht at Cartage suppowalle,

That wes the cheffe off all Affryke,  
 A fayre cyté nane till it lyk,  
 And wes before Rome, but were,  
 Byggyd twa hundyr and sevynty yhere.  
 Swa thocht thai to defend wyth mycht,  
 Fra thame off Rome wyth all thare slycht,  
 Cyzily or odyr ylys sere,  
 That in the Gret Se lyand were. 1340

## CHAP. XIII.

*How quhen Hanyball quhyte  
 Hys in Cyzell discomfite.*

**T**WA hundyr yhere and sixty,  
 And nyne to rekyn fullyly,  
 Hanyball the eldare yhude,  
 Wyttht a welle gret multitud  
 Off welle arayid and armyd men,  
 And elephantis tauld thrys tene ;  
 Wyttht thai be schype he tuk the Se,  
 In Cyzyly swa arrywyde he.  
 The Romanys sone gaddryd ware,  
 And wyttht hym faucht in batale thare, 1350  
 And handlyd hym in fecht sa fast  
 That thai hym wencust at the last.  
 Hys elephantis thare thryis ten  
 Thai tuk, and slewe nere all [the] men,  
 And his nawyne nere tuk thai  
 That scantly wan hym-self away.  
 Ane than off the consules,  
 Attilius that called wes,

Tuk wyttht hym a gret multitude  
 Off men, arayid in armys gude, 1360  
 And passyd wyttht that ost the Se;  
 In Cartage sone arywyde he,  
 And foure and sevynty cyteis sere,  
 And all that in thame duelland weré,  
 Throuch all Affryk, as he rade,  
 All subjecte thame to Rome he made.  
 And throuch the land as he rad swa  
 Toward the wattyr off Bagrada,  
 Off sex score off fute he fand  
 Ane eddyr, lach on erd crepand, 1370  
 That mony off hys men to dede  
 Had slayne, and swellyde in that stæde.  
 Wyttht that eddyr sa he wroucht,  
 That to dede [he] sone hyr broucht,  
 And the skyn gert fra hyr tyte,  
 And to Rome syne he send it.

Thai off Cartage in this quhille  
 Have tetryde walde wyttht this Attyle;  
 That he refoysyd wtrelly  
 For caus that he thought halyly 1380  
 For till hæwe wonnyn thame wyth were,  
 Set all thare willys had bene contrere.  
 Than thai off Cartage, wyttht counsalle,  
 The Affrycanys tuk to thame hale,  
 And faucht wyttht Attyle and his ost,  
 And wencust hym for all his bost.  
 Thare wyttht thame off Affryk qwyte  
 The Romanys wes discumfyt,  
 And Attyle Regule thare chyftane  
 Wes yholdyn and as presownere tane, 1390  
 And to Cartage, in presowne

Wes send, but lypnyng off rawnsoun.

In Rome than Emilyus,

And his falow Fulvius,

Than off that towne twa consules,

Fra thai hard how this hapnyd wes,

F. 61. Thre hundyr schyppys thai gert be

Stuffyde and layd to the se,

In Affryk tyll arywe onane,

For to reveng that thai had tane.

1400

The Affrykanys sone in hy

Recowntryd thame dispytwysly

Wytht schyppys thre hundyr; thare agayne,

On the Se than wes the Romanys slayne,

And thaire nawyne takyn qwyte,

And all thare hale ost discumfyte.

#### CHAP. XIV.

*This Chapter [tellis] that a fnde,*

*Here the Cpte swerghnde.*

**T**WA hundyr and foure score off yhere

Befor the byrth off oure Lord dere,

A fell subversyowne and suddayne

Had hale the Cyté nere ouretane;

1410

For off Tybere the rywere,

Sa retht off spate wyth watrys sere

Ras, that all wytht-in the towne

The gret byggynys it kest downe

Sa qwyttly than, that men wald wene

That nevyr byggyne thare had bene.

The Frankis men in to that tyde



Made thame off newe thare-for to ryde  
 Agayne the Romanys, bot thai  
 Recowntryd thame in gud aray, 1420  
 Sa that the Frankis men qwyte  
 Wes wytht Romanys discumfyte.

## CHAP. XV.

*When Hanybal the Romanys quhgte  
 First in batale discomfite.*

**T**WA hundyr wyntyr and nynteyne  
 Or lychtare wes the Madyne cleyne,  
 Hanyball wyth his empyre,  
 Off Affryk than bath lord and syre,  
 Passyd in to Spayne, and thare a towne,  
 Famows and off gret renowne,  
 Sagount be name, assegyd he,  
 And stratly gert it kepyt be 1430  
 Fra all profyte and wytale  
 Quhill thai wytht-in begouth to fayle,  
 Throuch defawte and hungyr sare,  
 Sa [that] on nede thai yholdyn ware,  
 And delyvyrid wes the towne  
 And he till erd gert cast it downe,  
 For caus in all tyme that it  
 To Rome wes in to frendschepe knyht.  
 The Romanys off thare intent  
 Tyll Hanyball gert message sent, 1440  
 Bot on na-kyn wys wald he  
 Thaire messyngerys wytht eyne se,  
 Nor off thaire tythyngys walde he here,

Na spere quhar-wyth thai chargyde were.  
In Rome that tyme Publius,  
Scypon, and Symphronius,  
Chosyn ware thre Consules,  
And governand thare office wes  
Quhen Hanyball wytht his powere  
Come wyth his ost, as man off were, 1450  
Out oure the hillys off Pyrreny,  
The nerrast way in Ytaly.  
Wyth gret traŵaylle as he past,  
In Ytaly, yhit at the last,  
He come in wyth gret were and payne,  
And wyth his ost thaire tuk the playne,  
That wes fully reknyd then  
Ane hundyr thousand off fut-men,  
And twenty thousand men on hors,  
Fayr off fassown and off cors. 1460  
Scypio, that tyme wes  
Ane chosyne off the Consules,  
In to that playne faucht wyth him thare,  
And woundyd Hanyball ryght sare;  
But to record yhow schortly,  
The Romanys ware halily,  
Wyth the Affricanys qwyte  
In that batayle discumfyte:  
Thare-eftyr quhen Symphronius  
Had herd that it had hapnyd thus, 1470  
Till his falowe Scypion  
Wytht his ost he come onone,  
Off Sythy wyth his falowis all,  
And faucht ryght fast wyth Hanyball,  
The Romanys yhit, nevyrtheles,  
In that batayle discumfyte wes,

Swa that Symphron wes rycht fayne  
 That he wan fra fecht wnslayne  
 Hym allane, wyth-outyn ma,  
 As he than saw the fortoun ga, 1480  
 Quhen all [this] wycory wes done,  
 This Hanyball wyth his ost sone  
 In Tuskayne passyd wyth gret fayre,  
 Wytth-in the fyrst moneth off wayre,  
 And furth wyth his batyll syne  
 Toward the hyllys off Appennyne,  
 Quhar that sa thyk the snawe felle,  
 Wytth haylstanys bath scharpe and snelle,  
 That all his elyphantis thare,  
 And hors and catalle, peryst ware. 1490  
 F. 62. This Hanyball yhit, nevyrtheles,  
 Wyst welle that Schir Flamyne wes,  
 Quhen all the Romanys ware ourtane,  
 Left in the tentis hym allane,  
 Hastyly he turnys agayne  
 Hym till have [wyncust] and have slayne;  
 Bot Flamyne wytth his cumpany  
 Recountryd hym rycht stoutly,  
 Bot yhit, throwch frawde off Hanyballe,  
 He and his ost wes wencust all, 1500  
 Sa that off the Romanys hale  
 Dede and slayne in that batale  
 Wes fyve and twenty thousand thare,  
 And sex thowsand takyne ware.

## CHAP. XVI.

How thre bollis off rpngis were  
Till Cartage send, now schall ghe here.

TWA hundyr yhere ellew̄yn and ane  
Or God off Mary flesch had tane,  
In Rome Lucy Mylyus,  
Paule, and alsua Publius  
Tarentyne, and W̄arro wes  
In to the towne maid Consules, 1510  
And till a cyté callid Canos  
Wyth-in the Poyle, on set purpos  
The Romanys send thame to fecht  
Wyth Hanyball and his gret mecht;  
Off Romanys in [to] batale thare  
Foure and fourty thousand ware  
Reknyd and slayne wpon that grene;  
Before that day wes nevyr sene  
That thai off Rome, wyth sic dispyte,  
Wes sa haly discumfyte; 1520  
For thare wes Emylius,  
And his falowe callid Paulus,  
That for the grettest that tyme wes  
Chosyn to be Consules,  
And off the Pretore twenty men,  
And grettest off the cownsale then,  
And off the senatowrys thretty thare,  
Slayne in that fecht or takyn ware.  
Off gentyll knychtis than off fute,  
That owsyd nothyr spure na bute, 1530

Thre hundyr deyð in that batale,  
 And fowrti thousand othir hale  
 Off knychtis armyd wpon hors,  
 Fayre off fassowne and [of] cors,  
 Slayne in to that journe wes.

Than ane off the Consules,  
 That be name was W̃arro callyd,  
 As in his buk Frer Martyne tallid,  
 All prewaly owte off the rowte  
 Wytht fyfty men on hors, for dowte  
 Off hys lyff, to W̃enys flede

1540

F. 62. b.

For to be tane or slayne thai drede.  
 To [the] Romanys but [ony] wene  
 This the lattast day had bene,  
 Gyve Hanyball in tyll all hy,  
 Quhen done was all the wictory,  
 Had past strawcht wytht his menyhe,  
 For tyll have tane wp the cyté.  
 In takyn off that wictory,  
 Quhen endyt wes this juperdy,  
 Off gold rengys, fayre and brycht,  
 Tane off thare fyngrys slayne in that fycht,  
 Thre moys that was thre bollys mete,  
 This Hanyball wytht-owtyn lete  
 To Cartage gert in hy be send,  
 Quhen that this jornay had tane end.

1550

Than were the Romanys sa wa,  
 And for this cas disparityd swa,  
 That thai maid thame haly bowne  
 For tyll have fled and left the towne,  
 Na hade bene Scypio Affrycane,  
 That off the knychtis wes chyftane,  
 Wyth drawyn swerd than held thame in,

1560

And thought awantage yhit to wyne.  
Off cownsaile than, wyth-outyn bade,  
Off [the] threllys that thai hade,  
Bowcht before off comowne prys,  
Wyth-in the towne to mak serwys,  
He made knychtis in that nede,  
And thaim arayid in honest wede, 1570  
And armwrys, that halowyd ware  
To goddys in thaire tempyllis thare,  
Thai tuk in that necessyte,  
And in thai gert thame armyd be  
All thai threllys evryilkane,  
For that ensawmpyll had thai tane  
Be counsaile off ane [Run]yus,  
That tauld thame how that Romulus  
Off murtheraris he kynchtis made,  
And thewys that he in presowne hade, 1580  
And mysdoarys mony ma,  
All wnpunysyd he lete ga  
In fredome, quhill that he had hale  
Sex thousand wycht men to batale.  
The Romanys be this counsaile sone  
The lyk manyr has all done,  
Sa Rome before disparyd than  
Respyre in to gud hope began.  
Bot yhit, as Orosius  
In tyll his cornyklys tellis ws, 1590  
Quha that in Rome befor had bene,  
And had off it the wurschype sene,  
He wald have bene all rede for schame,  
Fra he had sene thare reale fame  
Chawngyd, [and] thare reawte,  
Than turnyd in deformyte,

For nane thare governale than had  
 To sauff barnys off yhowthad,  
 Threllys, both bownd or carle,  
 F. 63. That oysyd before to bere and harle ; 1600  
 And suppos thai thai war soucht,  
 And all in tyll hale nowmyr broucht,  
 Yhit war thai nought to sight plesand,  
 Na in tyll all poynt sufficiand ;  
 For that tyme all thaire senatowrys  
 That chosyn wes to thare succowrys  
 Behuwyd to be in thare serwys  
 Informyd and kend, as yhong nowys.

## CHAP. XVII.

*How Gangball, throw schowrys snell,  
 How lettide off hys purpos felle.*

TWA hundyr yhere and twys thre  
 Befor the [blessit] Natyvyté, 1610  
 Hanybyll, wytth mekyll bost,  
 Off Chawmpayne mowyd hale his ost,  
 And thre myle wyth-out the towne abade,  
 And therefore the Romanys murnyng maid,  
 And all the senatowrys ilkane  
 Sa wytth radnes wes ouretane,  
 And owte off thare [wit] sa qwyte,  
 That thai ware, but pres, discumfyte :  
 Yhit the women nevyrtheles  
 Apon the wallis besy wes, 1620  
 Layand stanys here and thare,  
 Quhare that thai thought mast lykly ware

Thame to defend in tyme off were,  
 Eftyr as thai saw thare mystere.  
 And Hanyball wyth his ost syne  
 Come to the yhet wes callyd Collyne ;  
 Thare the consule Fulvyus  
 Saw that he wes cummyn thus,  
 Gaddryd all the Romanys hale  
 For tyll have gyvyn thare batale ; 1630  
 And as thai suld have sammyn bene  
 Togyddyre runnyn on the grene,  
 Sa gret tempest and halestayne wycht  
 Fell wyth sik fors and [wyth] sic pyth,  
 That bathe the ostis anoyid wes sare,  
 Or thai wytth-in thare tentis ware.  
 Thus fyrst quhen that that tempest left,  
 For tyll have met thai trystyd eft,  
 The neyst tyme that thai mycht se  
 A day set in serenyte, 1640  
 On the tyme that thai that sete,  
 Bathe hayle and tempest were thame wete,  
 That wytth mare dowt etchapyde thai  
 Than, na thai dide the fyrst day.  
 Hanyball be that welle thought  
 That he be man wes lettyd noucht  
 To wast and wndo the cyté,  
 Bot throucht Goddys gret powsté,  
 Fra Rome than he remowyed hale  
 Hys ost, but fandyng off batale. 1650  
 Scypio that tyme Affrikane  
 Hade sevyn and twenty [wynty]r gane  
 Off his eyld, and than he  
 Was prysit a man off gret powsté ;  
 He passyde in to Spayne off were



And Cartage newe wyth his powere  
 He wan, and gat thaire gret tresowre  
 Gaddryde lang tyme thare befour, .  
 Sylvyr [and] golde, and thare-off he  
 Payid till his knyghtys large fe, 1660  
 And thaire he tuk Magon wytth-all,  
 That brothire wes till Hanyball,  
 And to the Romanys hym send he  
 In presowne for till haldyn be.  
 Quhen Scypio wpon this wyis  
 Had done in Spayne thir wictoryis,  
 In till Affryk syne he past  
 And fell in fechtynge thare sa fast  
 Wytth the duk off Affryk thare,  
 That, off his adversaris, ware 1670  
 Fourty thowsand slayne and dede,  
 And he, wastand fra sted to sted,  
 All throucht the land in ryot rad  
 And in tyll it his maystry made,  
 Na nane fra hym mycht thame defende.  
 Than thai off Cartage sowne gert send  
 Till Hanyball, and bad hym spede  
 Hym hame, and help thame in thare nede.  
 On gretynge than fell Hanyball  
 For Ytaly that he left all, 1680  
 And all the knyghtys that thare was  
 Off Ytaly, and wald noucht pas  
 Wyth hym in Affryk, but remede,  
 He slwe and gert be put to dede.  
 Syne to Cartage he come onone,  
 And thare, quhen he sawe Scypyon,  
 Off pes to trete wes all his thought,  
 Bot it fell thai accordyd noucht,

And sa behuwyd thame on nede  
 Thane to fecht and batalle spede, 1690  
 And efftyre lang fechtynge thare,  
 Thai off Cartage wencust ware,  
 And Hanyball, bot wyth foure men  
 On hors, but ma, wes chapyd then,  
 And fra the batale gat away  
 Hys lyff [sa] sawffyd he that day.  
 Thus Scypyon had the vycory,  
 And wytth his ost syne halyly,  
 Wan off Cartage the cyté,  
 And made in it his entré. 1700

## CHAP. XVIII.

*How quhen Antiochus kyng  
 With the Romanis made anng.*

F. 64. **T**WA hundyre wyntyre and sex oure  
 Or Mary bare oure Salwyoure,  
 The secound batalle Affrycane  
 Was all done and end had tane,  
 And hastyly son eftyr than  
 The were off Macedone began,  
 Quhen that Flamyne, that than wes  
 Ane chosyne off the Consules,  
 Eftyr mony juperdyis,  
 And syndry wonnyn vycoryis, 1710  
 Grawntyt pes and trwys onone  
 Tyll Phylippe kyng off Macedone,  
 That eftyre Alexsawndyr wes dede  
 Succedyd kyng in tyll his stede

Ane hundyre wyntyre and twenty.  
 The captywys than halyly  
 Off the Romanys, all  
 Tane before wyth Hanyball,  
 Recoveryd wes throuch Scypyon,  
 And folowid his chare onone 1720  
 And gert schaŵe off thare heŵyd the hare,  
 In takyn that thai delyveryd ware  
 Fra serwytute and threllage fre,  
 Passand hame in thare cuntré.

Eftyre this it hapnyd thus  
 The kyng, that [tyme], Anthiocus,  
 Agayne the Romanys ras off were,  
 And come on Se, wytht his powere,  
 In tyll Europe off Asy,  
 And Hanyball than prewaly 1730  
 Drest tyll hym agayne Scypion  
 In tyll confederation,  
 Sa that his Amerall was he  
 Tyll all hys Nawyne apon Se.

Scipio than Affricane  
 The Romanys wytht hym has he tane,  
 And fawcht wytht Hanyball sa fast,  
 Till he hym wencust at the last,  
 And mad apon hym fellounne chas,  
 And he for dede than dredand was, 1740  
 All his pyth put in tyll spede  
 As he was artyd than on nede;  
 And quhen the kyng Antyocus  
 Swa that his werd turnyd thus,  
 Tretyd wpone trw onone,  
 And concord made wyth Scypyon.  
 Off Rome ar othir batalis sere,

That, gyff thai ware all reknyd here,  
 I dred suld dull yhoure appetyte,  
 And gendyre leth mare than delyte.

1750

## CHAP. XIX.

*How quhen the Peychtis in Scotlande  
 Come, and in it wes regnande.*

**T**WA hundyr wyntyre, and na mare,  
 Or that the madyn Mary bare  
 Jhesu Cryst, a cumpany  
 Out off the kynryk off Sythy  
 Come off Peychtis in Irland,  
 Quhar than the Scottis war duelland,  
 And wald have bene in parcenary  
 In to that land duelland thaim by.  
 That the Scottys thame denyd;  
 Bot sayd, thare was unoccupyd,  
 Lyand beyhond an arme off Se  
 Anentis thame, a gret cuntré,  
 That oft thai saw on dayis lycht,  
 Quhen that the Sone wes schynand brycht:  
 And that, thai said, wes profytabille  
 For to ma to thame habitabyll;  
 And counsalyd thame for to pas in  
 That ilk land, and it to wyn;  
 And thai suld rys in thare defence,  
 Gyff ony maid thame resistence,  
 And thai suld mak thame suppowalle  
 Wytht gud, and men, and wytht wytalle.  
 The Peychyts askyd the Scottis then

F. 64. b.

1760

1770

Weddyt to be wyth thaire wemen,  
 Syn nakyn women off thare kyth  
 Thai broucht wyth-in the land thame wyth,  
 Swa wytht thame till alyid be  
 Thai and thare posteryté.

That was accordyd on this wys,  
 That giff ony dout suld rys, 1780  
 Quha suld succede, and regne as kyng,  
 Quhen that the kyngis maid endyng,  
 He sulde be kyng off all the hale,  
 That cummyn war be lyine female;  
 And off the male suld nane succed,  
 Bot it ware clere, but ony drede.  
 This prerogatywe than  
 The Scottis fra [the] Peychtys wan,  
 And was kepyd welle allwayis  
 Among the Peychtys in thare dayis. 1790  
 Syne thai passyd that land wythin,  
 To thame and thairis it to wyn,  
 And the Northt landys occupyid.

## CHAP. XIX.

[From MSS. C., E. I., etc.]

Cotton, F. 48. . . . .  
 Syne thai passit that lande witin †1791  
 To thame and to thar aris to wyn,  
 And the Northe landis occupyide,  
 The Souythe that tyme inhabyide  
 Withe Brettownys of Brutus seide,

By thaim wes Scottis in that tyde,  
Regnand, and the fyrst man  
Off thai wes Fergus-Ercswne than :  
And in the Sowth yhit as we rede  
Wes Bretownys than off Brwtys sede.

Fra Fergus be lyne  
Quhill that Kyned-Makalpyne 1800  
Ras as kyng, and was regnand  
Wytht-in the kynrik off Scotland,  
Few persownys lynyalle,

---

Sa in our Cornyclis, as we reide,  
That Scottis war regnande mony yhere  
Befor the Peychtis cummyn were  
Withe-in Scotland, I can noucht ken  
Qwhat thai war callit that regnyt then, † 1800  
Bot Fergus Erschson, I wisse,  
The fyrst of Scottis he reknyt is  
That regnyt, as the Cornyclis sayis,  
Kyng befor the Peychtis dayis,  
And qwha that redly se kan  
He wes bot the tende man.  
For to rekkyn ewyn be lyne  
Befor Kenyaucht-Makalpyne.  
Othir seyr that we of reide  
Betweyn tha twa, as thai succeide, † 1810  
Sum fel collateralle  
And regnande our the Scottis haile,  
As coursse made and qwhalite  
Ayris wareande to be ;  
Sum hapnyt to ryng throw malice,

Swm othir fell collateralle,  
 As cours made and qualyté  
 Ayrys waſerand for to be.  
 Sum hapnyd to regne throuch malice,  
 And ilkane othir wald ſuppryce.  
 Bot fra this Fergus evin be lyne  
 Kynede diſcendyd Makalpyne.  
 And, as we fynd in oure ſtory,  
 Crwthne that tyme Makrymy  
 Wes the fyrſt in till Scotland

1810

---

And ilkan othir walde ſuppryſſe,  
 Bot fra this Fergus, ewyn be lyne,  
 Kenyaucht diſcendit Makalpyne,  
 And was bot in the tende gre,  
 And yhit mere, gif yhe wil ſe,  
 Reknyſ qwhat the tend liſſit here,  
 And how lang tyme thai regnande were,  
 And thai al ſal noucht excede  
 Thre hundyr yhere wyth-outyn dreide,  
 Qwhar in the Cornykil writtyn is  
 Twelf hundir, and fere mare I wiſ,  
 Fra fyrſt the Scottis war regnande  
 Or Kynyauch Makalpyn wan the lande.

† 1820

Bot be othir Auctouris ſeyr  
 The Scottis, I fynde, begouthe to ſtere  
 Qwhen that the Peycltis was regnande;  
 To that I ame accordande,  
 And thare date ſet I wil  
 Qwhen the proceſſe is lede thar-til.  
 In til this tyme be our ſtory  
 Cruthne that tyme Makryny.

† 1830

Atoure the Peychtys kyng regnand ;  
 He lyvyd, and regnyd fyfty yhere ;  
 Bot off his douchty dedis sere  
 I wyll tell na mare than I wate,  
 F. 66. For Cornykkkis, that off hym wrate,  
 Sayd, he wes a juge myld  
 Regnand oure the Peychtys wyld. 1820  
 Nest tyll [hym] succedyd Gede,  
 And was maid kyng in till his stede  
 Oure the Peychtys in Scotland  
 Ane hundyr and fyfty yhere regnand.

---

Was the first in to Scotlande  
 Attour the Peychtis kyng regnande :  
 He liffit and regnyt fifty yher,  
 Bot of his douchty dedis seyr † 1840  
 I will tell na mar than I wate ;  
 For Cornycleris that of hym wrate,  
 Saide, he wes a juge mylde  
 Regnande our the Peychtis wilde.  
 Next til hym succedit Gede,  
 And was made kyng in til his stede  
 Oure the Peychtis in Scotlande  
 Ane hundyr and fyfty yher regnande.



## CHAPTER XX.

*How Cartage, off consale,  
 Was ordanpt to be wndone all hale.*

ANE hundyr and fyfty yhere beforne  
 Or God wes off our Lady borne,  
 Off Rome gaddryd the senage  
 And ordanyd till wndo all Cartage.  
 Scypyo than Affrycane  
 Lord off the Romanys and chyftane 1830  
 Gert in hy befor hym call  
 The cytyzanyys off Cartage all,  
 And gaŵe thame stratly mawndement,  
 But ony kyn impedymment,  
 Hastyly for till hym bryng  
 Thare wapnys all, and thare armynge,  
 And all thaire naŵyn syne bad he  
 Suld tyll hym delyveryde be,  
 And eftyrr that he bad thame mare,  
 Fra the se that thai suld fare 1840  
 Ten thowsand pasys syne, but lete ;  
 In sorowe sare than war thai sete,  
 Sum nevyrrtheles yhyt passyd sone,  
 And in all as he bad has done,  
 Sum chesydd errare thare pyth to proŵe,  
 Or thai wald fra the se remowe,  
 And sum chesid errare to de  
 Than thai walde fra thare fredume flé.  
 Chyfftanys than thai chesydd twa,  
 And gert off gold and silvyrr ma 1850

The armwrys, and the wapnys all,  
 That to thare nede wes lyk to fall,  
 On this wyis thai relevyd welle  
 All thare defawte off yrne and stelle.  
 Scypio than in his ire

Gert set the towne than in [a] fyre,  
 And in it thare the fyre brynnand  
 Seŵyntene dayis wes ay lestand.

This wes the fyrst destructyoun

Off Cartage, that nobill towne,

1860

Quhen sevyn hundyr yhere and ane

Fra it wes foundyt qwynt wes gane.

The thryd batale Punyk here

Tays end, and lestis bot foure yhere ;

The secund bataille bath and it.

Held twenty yhere, as sayis the wryt,

Thretty thousand off men thare

And fyve and twenty thousand ware

Off women, reknyd off Cartage,

That come and yhald thame in thrillage,

1870

Servandys for tyll be alway

To the Romanys fra that day ;

F. 66. b.

For dowl thai had [beyn] perysyd in

The cyté quhen thai saw it bryn ;

Wytht bettyr wyll yhit othir ma

In to that brynnand fyre walde ga,

And de wytht-[in] thare awyn fre,

Than in to serwyttute to be

Serwand to the Romanys ay,

Thai and thare ayrys fra that day.

1880

## CHAP. XXI.

*How the Romanys than  
Corynt and Achage wan.*

**A**NE hundyr and sex and fourty yhere  
 Before that Mary, madyn clere,  
 God had borne off hyr body,  
 Cartage delete wes halyly,  
 And off Coryntus than the towne  
 Famows and off gret renowne  
 In to Grece, the Romanys than  
 Assegyd wytth thare ost, and wan.  
 Wytth-in the towne sic multitude  
 Off symulacrys on pillaris stude,  
 Massy, grete, welle polyst syne,  
 Made off gold and sylvyr fyne;  
 Eftyre that all that towne in fyre  
 Wes brynt and fallyn in colys schyre,  
 All the metall moltynnyd than  
 In tyll a qwerne togydder ran;  
 That metalle, mad sa pure and fyne,  
 Off Corynt had the tytill syne,  
 And all the weschall off it made  
 The name thare-efft off Corynt hade.

1890

1900

In to this tym I spak beforne,  
 In to Rome a barne wes borne  
 That had foure handys and foure fete,  
 Foure eyne and foure eyrys yhete,  
 And before had pyncillis twa.

The fyre that tyme off Ethna,

That is ane hyll wythin Cyzile,  
 Brwstyd owt in to that quhille,  
 Sa that it brynt all suddanly  
 Sere landys that lay nere [thar] by. 1910

Alsua that tyme in Cyzille  
 Thare ras a suddane were serville,  
 That breyde the Romanys als welle  
 As thame off Cyzille ilka delle.  
 Bot off thai schortly for to say  
 Twenty thousand on a day  
 Discumfyte wes, and slayne all downe,  
 And thare pompe browecht till confusioun.  
 Ay serwandys quhen that yhe se rys,  
 In yre thare lord[is] for till supprys, 1920  
 Quhat the oys is seldynyare,  
 It hapnys all the cruellare.

F. 66.

For-thi till Alexandyr the kyng,  
 Arystotyll, in his techyng,  
 Sayd, "Gyff thow thynkys for to be  
 Kyng to regne in reawte,  
 Be wyt off lordys thow suld lywe,  
 And thé fra lustys to wertu gywe,  
 Twyn-tungyd serwandys on all wys,  
 And wykyd fals thow sall disprys, 1930  
 And thai that off kynd suld be  
 Threll serwandys in tyll powerte,  
 Thow sall relew thame to na hycht,  
 Na put thame to na stat off mycht,  
 For dowl that thai, apon sic wys  
 As ryweris reche for rayne wyll rys,  
 And wavyre mare wytth waſys wude,  
 Than wyll a kyndly standand flude,  
 Ryse agayne thare lord off were,

Hym to supprys wyth thaire powere ; 1940  
 Fra thai be growyn in welth and welle,  
 And till wnkyndly slepand seile,  
 Till maistry or till mykyll mycht,  
 Till honour and till wnhaʷand hycht,  
 Fra reuth thai sall thare erys dyt,  
 And na thyng will off mercy wyt,  
 Bot sall wyth-draw thame fra peté,  
 Mare deffe than ony awsk yhe se.  
 The reule off resowne, nevyrtheles,  
 Sall ye noucht lede in that straytnes, 1950  
 Thou sall hym wytth gud relewe,  
 And in till state off honure prewe  
 That belyste is in [to] bownté.  
 And avynand is off honesté.  
 Off fayre affere and thewys gud,  
 Wértuws, and myld off mwde ;  
 Set that he want faculté,  
 Or kyn, and gud in till plente.  
 For the soyth, gywe yhe will say,  
 Welth and ryches wownt wes ay 1960  
 In wantones mare will to drawe  
 Than havynng fayr in mesure hawe.  
 And certys quha that habowndis  
 But ryches, in till gud thewys,  
 Lawte, wyte, and fayr haʷyng,  
 He may noucht fale off owtward thyng.  
 For thai he may well set before  
 Sylvyr, gold, and all tresore,  
 And he may symply wyth that prys  
 Redeme, but mare, his landis wys, 1970  
 And fayre lordschip tyl hym wyn,  
 And grow in gentill kyth and kyn.

I meyne noucht his necessyte  
 That alway lywys in honeste,  
 Owtward hawand sufficiens,  
 And inward wertuwis habowndans;  
 He may be callyd a gentill-man  
 That wertu and fayr hawyng can  
 Off fre men ay the multitude  
 Sall set thame for till eyk the gude, 1980  
 F. 66. b. Wyth honowre land and lordschype wyn  
 And helpe thare-self, thaire kyth, thare kyn;  
 Bot the threllys serwandys ay  
 Sall honesté at wndyr lay  
 And, but mercy, sall supprys  
 Quhen wantones mays thame to rys."

The land off Cyzille in the Se  
 Wes that tyme off sic caytyfte,  
 Till nane honowre awenand,  
 Na till na statis sufficyand, 1990  
 Till tyrandys quhilum wndyrloute,  
 And quhill wytth serwandis in gret dowte,  
 And, wndyre gret exactyown,  
 Haldyn in till supprysiowne.

## CHAP. XXII.

*Quhen thai off Rome gert biggid be  
 Agayne off Cartage the cyté.*

**A**NE hundyre and twenty yhere before  
 And ane to rekyn or God wes bore,  
 The Romanys in to that quhille  
 To Cartage send off thare famyle,

For till big wp agayne the towne,  
 And mak thare habitatyowne 2000  
 Thare, and hald it fra that day  
 Trybutare till Rome alway,  
 That twenty yhere and twa wes efft  
 That it wes brynt in colys left.

The hill off Ethna than off fyre  
 Brak out, and brynt in colys schyre,  
 [And] all the howsis off Catenes,  
 That in till Cyzille lyand wes ;  
 And for that caus thai freyde were  
 Fra the trewage off ten yhere, 2010  
 Sa that thai mycht relewyd be,  
 And byg agayne thare brynt cyté.

## CHAP. XXIII.

*How many Romanis slayne wes,  
 And women rageand in wodnes.*

**A**NE hundyr wyntyr and ellewyn,  
 Or Mary bare the Kyng off Hewyn,  
 The Romanys wyth thare Consules  
 In were and batayle movyd wes  
 Agayne syndry regyownys,  
 Bath Duche and Frankys natyownys,  
 That set halyly thare intent,  
 Bwndyn apon ane assent, 2020  
 The Romanys till haŵe wndone ;  
 And thare apon thai semlyd sone  
 In fecht, quhar off the cytezanys,  
 Besid othire owte Romanys,

Foure score of thoussanddis wes slayne downe,  
 Besyd tha wyttht-owte the towne,  
 Fourty thousand reknyd hale  
 Off Romanys slayne wytthtin batalle.  
 Sex score off thousand in that fycht  
 Slayne to the dede wes dycht. 2030  
 That batell was off sic felny,

- F. 67. That bot ten men anerly  
 Off the Romanys fra that place  
 Etchapyd, for to tell the cas.  
 Than thai off Rome gret murnyng made,  
 And howerand in gret dowte abade,  
 Dredand sare that that menyhe  
 Suld wyn and tak wp thare cyté.  
 The Duche-men and thai [of] Cymbry  
 Togyddyr knyht in cumpany 2040  
 In Ytaly, as thai abade,  
 Thare sudjowrnynng for till have made,  
 Thame to refresche in wyntyrt tyde,  
 And frostys fell for till ourbyde.  
 The Romanys wyth thare consules,  
 Or thai to fecht arayid wes,  
 Brak apon thame suddanly.  
 And slwe [thaim] downe dispytwysly,  
 Bot thai off Rome, in that dispyte,  
 Yhit wes noucht off all scathys qwyte, 2050  
 For off thaim mony slayne wes thare :  
 Thare inymyis yhit reknyd ware  
 Ane hundyr and sex[ty] thousand dede,  
 And presownerys tane in to that stede  
 Wes reknyd sevynty thousand gude,  
 Wyttht-owte a gret multytude  
 Off wemen, rageand in wodenes,



And fallyn, for dule, in heŵynes ;  
 Quhill thai put thaim-self to dede,  
 And slwe thare barnys, but remede.

2060

In memor off that victory  
 The Romanys gert byg in hy  
 A tempill fayr, and that gert thai  
 Be Cymbry callid eftyr ay,  
 That syne wes haldyn in honore  
 Nere Saynct Mary the Majore.

## CHAP. XXIV.

*The next folowande Chapytere  
 Tellis off fell takynnis sere.*

**F**OUR schore off wyntyre and sevyntene  
 Or lychtare wes the Madyne clene,  
 The state off Rome begouth to be  
 Stade in gret perplexyté,  
 Amang thame-self deŵysyd swa,  
 That thai ware lyk gret skath to ta,  
 Na ware the hape it sessyd sone,  
 Fra that thai to the dede wes done,  
 Throuch consalle off the Consules,  
 That the fyrst matyr off it wes ;  
 Than throwcht fellowne taknys sere  
 The Romanys all [a]breyd were.

2070

At Careptyne, as thai ware set,  
 Apon a day all at the mete,  
 Apon the burde owte off thare breyde,  
 Thare brystyd owt the blud all rede ;  
 Nere by [in] ane othire plas

2080

F. 67. b.    The erde clave and oppynnyd was,  
               And a low out off that ryfft  
               Strak wp evyn nere to the lyfft,  
               And alkyne best hamly thare  
               That amang men lywand ware,  
               Left thare stablys and thare fude,  
               And yhelland ran, as thai ware wude,        2090  
               Tyll woddys and till wyldyrnes,  
               Lewand thare auld hamlynes;  
               And hundys, that ay kyndly  
               Requirys mennys cumpany,  
               Ran wud as wolwys to the wode,  
               Gowland in gret multytude.

              Fra thir taknys was all done  
               Othir casis hapnyd sone,  
               For Julyus Cesare, in Sampnyte,  
               Wes wyttht his hale ost discumfyte,        2100  
               That all his men bot he [al]ane  
               In to that land wes slayne or tane;  
               Pompeyus wencust wes alsua,  
               And in till othir landis ma  
               All the Romanys wes qwyte  
               In tyll thaire werys discumfyte.  
               Tharefor the senage a clethyng  
               Made thame, in takyn off murnyng;  
               And Julyus Cesare in that wede  
               Wes wyttht thame clede, bot syne, but drede,    2110  
               Eftyre syndry juperdyis,  
               Quhare wencust wes his inymyis,  
               That garment he put fra hym sone,  
               And othire [weid] has on hym done.

              Pompeyus alsua, that Pretore  
               Discumfyte in tyll fecht before,

Wan and had great victoryis  
 In batayle, and in juperdyis :  
 Ascalon wytht his powere  
 He assegyde and wan off were ; 2120  
 Auchtene thousand men wes tane,  
 Slayne, and dede, wyth thare cheffane.  
 The Were Civile was than sa fele,  
 Sa owtrageows, and sa cruel,  
 Sa wyolent, and than sa kene,  
 That sic befor wes nevyre sene ;  
 For off the Romanys sere  
 Fechtand agane Silla were,  
 And off thame mony faucht alsua  
 Agaynis othir wytht Silla. 2130  
 Silla thane a Romane wes,  
 Ane chosyne off the Consules.  
 The Romanys in to tha dayis  
 Be thousandys, as Frer Martyn sayis,  
 Innowerabill wytht-in that fycht,  
 Wytht dyntys downe to ded wes dycht.  
 Quhill thai in were wes wedand thus,  
 A Roman than callyd Cantulus,  
 Till Silla sayde apon this wyis,  
 " In this were, and this juperdyis, 2140  
 We sla thaim all anarmyd downe,  
 That yhit relewe wald oure renowne,  
 And nakyd we slay thame in pes,  
 That walde ws helpe to wyn prowes."  
 Than Silla made for that resowne  
 A tabyll off prescryptyowne,  
 Sa that fyrst proscrywyd ware  
 Foure score off thousand men, and mare,  
 And fywe hundyr efftyr thai

Proscrywyd ware throucht this Silla. 2150  
 The Romanys swa was fra thare stede  
 Nere exlyde or slayne to dede.  
 This Were Civile ten yhere owte  
 Contynwyde wes wytht-owtyn dowte ;  
 And off the Romanys slayne ware  
 Ane hundyr and fyfty thousand thare ;  
 And endyng it begouth to ta  
 Eftyr that dede wes this Silla.  
 Pompeyus than the Oryente  
 Warrayd throuch fors and hardyment, 2160  
 And fawcht wyth twa and twenty sere  
 Kyngys off mycht and gret powere.

## CHAP. XXV.

In till this next Chapter,  
 Off Julius Cesare ghe sall here.

**F**OURE score off yhere, bot ane les,  
 Before that God off Mary wes  
 Borne, off Frans the regyownys  
 Tyll Cesare and sevyn legyownys  
 Gyvyn and delyveryd were,  
 To wyn off were wytht-in fywe yhere.  
 Off Trevyr syne, the gret cyté  
 He wan, and it dystroyd he. 2170  
 All Frans and Brettayne syne off were  
 To Rome he mad bath tributere ;  
 And a bryg he gert mak syne  
 Atoure the gret rywere off Ryne.  
 All Duche-land syne he oure rade

And tributere to Rome it made.

Thire dedys quhen [that] he had done,  
Till Rome he tuk his wayage sone.  
Wytht mare honour than thought he,  
For till have bene in that cyté

2180

For his worschype gret resayvyde  
Bot thare-off qwyte he was dyssaywyd  
For thai off Rome fra Julius  
Inclynynd till Pompeyus,  
Quharfore thai wald noucht till hym do  
Sik honowre as afferyde hym to,  
Na wald noucht mak off thare tresore  
Hys costys, as thai dyde before.

Agayne thare wyllys hale, for-thi  
In till the towne wytht his maystry  
He mad entre, and wp brak  
The tresoure hows, and syne cowth tak  
Off thare tresowre a gret dele  
Bath off mone and jowelle,  
And furth in werys syne he past  
Till he in Spayne come at the last ;  
Thare for till [telle] yhowe schortly  
Ay all hym fell the wyctory.

2190

F. 68. b.

In Ytaly syne turnyd he  
Thare for to fycht wytht this Pompé ;  
And Pompeyus wyth stowtnes  
To fecht wytht hym arayid wes.  
Thare, efftyre lang and hard bataylle,  
Pompeyus [ost] begouth to fayle,  
And hym-self syne at the last  
Turnyd the bak and fled rycht fast,  
And past throuch Asy in till Tyre,  
In Egypte syne, quhare lord and syre

2200

That tyme wes Schir Tolomé,  
That tuk and gert slay this Pompe; 2210  
Syne off hys fyngyre he gert ta  
Hys ryng, and his heȳyd alsua  
He gert stryk off, and thai he sent  
Till Julyus Cesare in present,  
That in tyll Alysandyr abade,  
Fra he the chas off Pompe made;  
Quhen he the heȳyd saw and the ryng  
Off Pompeyus, in gretyng  
He fell, and menyd sare that he  
On that manere suld endyde be. 2220  
Julyus Cesare that tyme thare  
Arryȳyd in tyll the ile off Fare;  
Off that ile all lord than wes  
A man off gret mycht, Achilles,  
Agayne Cesare he fell in fycht.  
Quhare slayne wes mony a douchty knyght  
Off Julyus Cesarys cumpany,  
And than thai slayne war halyly  
That before Pompeyus slwe.  
Than Julyus til hys schippis drwe, 2230  
And in that passage than he wes  
Set in tyll sik thrang and pres,  
That in tyll his bate, quhen he  
Wes gane and in it made entre,  
Throuche the charge at it bare,  
In to the se it sank rycht thare;  
Bot off that bate than in the se  
He lape, and thare swymmand he  
Held on till his schyppis fast,  
Twa hundyre pasys swa he past, 2240  
Haldand owthe the wattyre ay

Hys a hand as he swam that day,  
 And swa held all his lettrys dry,  
 In that hand closyd prewaly,  
 Till his galay qwyll that he  
 Come, and in it made entré.  
 Off Alysandyr the ost all hale  
 Off Se gaŵe hym than [harde] bataylle,  
 Thare bath thare naŵyne and thare kyng  
 Takyn wes throuch hard fechtyng,  
 Bot thare kyng off curtesy,  
 At thare askyng, [than] thraly  
 He lete pass, but rawnsone fre,  
 And playnly hym consalyd he  
 All his diligence to sete  
 Off the Romanys for to get

2250

F. 69. Friendschype, tendyrnes, and luwe,  
 And nakyn were agayne them muwe.

Bot that kyng, fra he wes fre  
 And all set in his awyn pousté,  
 Left that counsalle, or all foryhette,  
 And for the were all halle hym sette,  
 But throuch this Julyus he wes qwyte  
 On Se thare-efftyre discumfyte,  
 And twenty thousand off his men  
 Wes slayne in to that jowrne then,  
 And twelf thousand men were thare  
 Slayne fra this Julyus [than] Cesare;  
 Thre scor and ten bargis lang  
 Was tynt and drownyd in that thrang  
 And into this pres that kyng,  
 Awenand, honest, fayre, and yhing,  
 In to that bataylle wes sa mate,  
 That prewaly he gat a bate,

2260

2270

And to the land [than] walde haf past,  
Bot Julyus oste on hym sa fast  
Folowyd thare wytth sa gret pres  
That slayne in to that fechtyn he wes.  
And efftyre that apon that sand,  
Quhare mony bodyis slayne thai fand 2280  
And castyne wp, that kyng wytth crowne  
Thai knewe well be his habyrjowne  
Wytth gylt mayle, for in that plas  
Lyk till it nane fundyn was.  
Till Alysandyr Julyus send  
That hawbyrjowne, quhare thai 'it kend.  
For dispayre the towne than wes  
Yholdyn, and till Cleopatres  
This Julyus Cesare gaw all hale  
Off Egypt all the governale. 2290

Syne he passyd throuch Surry  
And wan gret lordschypis and syndry;  
And efftyre that to Rome come he,  
And [was] relewyd tyll heyere gre;  
For Dytoure that tyme thai hym made,  
And Consule als thare-efft, but bade;  
Baythe Spayne and Affryk apon were  
He made till Rome trybutere,  
And efftyre that in Rome wes he  
Ressaywyd wyth gret reawte. 2300

Than sevyn moneth and thre yhere,  
Quhen all thare werys endyt were,  
His stat he held as Empryowre,  
And lywyd in wyrshype and honowre;  
Bot wytth twa traytourys syn, Allas!  
He falsly dyssaywyd was;  
The tane off thai wes Cassius,



The tothir callyd wes than Brutus,  
 And yhit wes sayd that sexty may  
 In that consentyd to thai tway, 2310  
 Than in the [court] all suddanly  
 [Thai] stekyd hym rycht fellownly  
 Wytth scharpe pownsownys, and thai thare  
 Foure and twenty wowndys sare  
 F. 69. b. Gaue hym; and thus quhyle tha  
 Wes fellownly hym stekand swa,  
 And betwene thame thare bledand,  
 Stud ewyn wp wyth his rycht hand  
 [And] off hys gowne a lap tuk thare,  
 And cuveryd befor hys eyne bare, 2320  
 And wytth his left hand he held downe  
 The nethir lape thare off his gowne  
 Behynd lauch, that nane suld se  
 Spot, fylth, or wnhonesté  
 Behynd, in till his down fallyng.  
 This wes his last endyng  
 Eftyre that sax and twenty yhere  
 Off his eyld was passyd clere.  
 Hys body dede the pepyll syne  
 Brynt, and made off merbyll fyne 2330  
 A pyllare twenty fwte off hycht,  
 And it thai gert be set wp-rycht  
 In to the merket, thare gert thai  
 The powdyre and the banys lay.  
 Or Julyus deid, as I herd tell,  
 In Rome wncouth taknys felle;  
 Or he wes dede the hundryth day  
 Off fyrslaucht fell, brynt all away,  
 The fyrst lettyr off his state  
 That men apon his ymage wrate, 2340

Quhen that it wes fyrst wp set,  
 Ewyn in to the myd merkete.  
 C, that lettyre capytalle,  
 Is set in nowmerys wsualle  
 For ane hundyre, and for-thi  
 The Romanys had a fantasy  
 Fra C off Cesare wes away,  
 That abowte the hundyr day  
 Wouke, moneth, or moment,  
 Be [the] lest ay thare intent 2350  
 Be that nowmyre wes hoverand  
 And suddand casys abydand.

Off the nycht neyst gane beforne  
 That Julius slayne wes on the morne,  
 As he in tyll his chawmyr lay,  
 In tyll his bed lang forow day.  
 A suddane thude mad swylk a brus,  
 That all the wyndowys in a rus  
 Off his chawmyr quhare he lay  
 Brak wpe, and he than in affray 2360  
 Stert owte off his bed wytth that,  
 And lychtly on his solys gat,  
 For all the hows that tyme he wend  
 Off his lyff suld have made end.

Quhen he was dede in till his hand  
 Thai priwe lettrys closyd fand,  
 That warnyd off his dede hade bene,  
 Gyff he before wald thame have sene.  
 And all this tyme wytth-in Scotland  
 Ged oure the Peychtys was regnand. 2370

The state off Rome fyrst gowernyd wes  
 Wytth Kyngis before Consules  
 Twa hundyr yhere, foure scor, and sevyen,

F. 70. As Frere Martyne reknys ewyn ;  
 Foure hundyr wyntyre and twenty,  
 And foure to reknyn evynly,  
 Off Rome the gret stat governyd wes  
 Hale be chosyne Consules,  
 Quhill Julyus [Cesare] ras, and hale  
 Tuk till hym the governale.

2380

## CHAP. XXVI.

Off Octobiane ghe sall here  
 Next folowand in this Chapiters.

TWA and fourty yhere beforne  
 Or Jhesu off Mary wes borne,  
 Octovyane, than newew  
 Till Julyus that [the] Romanys slwe,  
 Ras off Rome bathe lord and syre,  
 And governyd stoutly the empyre ;  
 Fywe batayllis sere in his youthhede  
 He dyde, and prowyd gret manhede.  
 The fyrst off tha fywe and the last,  
 That I hawe lychtly [thus] owre past,  
 He dyd stoutly wytth Marchus,  
 Be surname callyd Antonius.  
 Quhen fyftene yhere wes bygane  
 Fra fyrst begouth Octowyanne,  
 For to regne in sic plente,  
 Off Rome the tresoure ekyd he,  
 The state [the] wyschype and the fame  
 That thai than ekyd till his name  
 August, that in propyrte

2390

Ay suld ekyng callid be, 2400  
And sa the Romanys fra that day  
Callyd hym Cesare August ay ;  
Fra thine he, and his successowrys  
Succedand in till empyowrys,  
For the tytill off thare state  
All tyme Cesare August wrate,  
And the empyre efftyre than  
Wes all subjecte till a man,  
And he fyrst as lord and syre  
Off all the warld aucht the Empyre, 2410  
And was callyd in Grew, for-thi,  
Fra thine furth the Monarchy.  
Syn this Octovyane  
The land off Spayne wyth batell wan,  
And mony othire landys sere,  
Off were he wan wytth his powere.  
In thai dayis Pannony,  
That marchand nere is Wngary,  
Tyberyus, hys stepsone,  
Wytth fellowne slauchtyr has wndone ; 2420  
And Duche-land syne als fast  
Tyberyus oure rade and past.  
This Duche-land cald Germany  
Strekand lyis fra Pannony  
To the gret rywere off Ryne,  
As sayis Orosius and Solyne.  
Thai sayis that rywerys thre  
Off Germany suld callid be ;  
Alba, that through Boem rynnys,  
And Adra, that nere it begynnys, 2430  
And the Vyssill in Poleynd land  
Begynnys, and throucht it is rennand.

F. 70. b.

Tyberyus wes warrayande  
 Thre yhere in this Duch-land,  
 Wytth legyownys tuelff off knyghtys gud.  
 The were than als cruell stude  
 That nane wes till it off owtrage  
 To sauff the gret were of Cartage;  
 For off Rome than legyownys thré  
 Wes slayne and tane in that cuntré;      2440  
 Bot efftyre that till hys empyre  
 Octovyane, bathe lord and syre,  
 Wan all that land, and halyly  
 Off all the warld a Monarchy,  
 He had in quiete and in pes  
 And Empryowre thare-off he wes,  
 Regnand in gret reawté,  
 Honor, state, and majesté:  
 That all the men off his empyre,  
 Noucht anerly bathe lord and syre.      2450  
 Or empryowre thai wald hym calle,  
 Bot for hale counsall thai said alle,  
 For his prys and his waloure,  
 As God thai wald hym all honoure.

All hys tyme in to unyté  
 The warld wes, and in cheryte,  
 And ilké man off ane accorde  
 Hym anerly kend for thare lorde;  
 He passyd noucht wytth-owtyn were  
 Off eyld ane and twenty yhere,      2460  
 Quhen he wes maid fyrst empyoure,  
 Bot it he led in gret honoure,  
 That for [his] prys and his gud fame,  
 August wes ekyd till his name.

Off his name that moneth ay

Wes August callyd to this day,  
 Before than Sextile it wes cald :  
 Be that ensawmpyll yhit we hald  
 The monethys neyst it folowand,  
 The fyrst at Marche begynnand, 2470  
 Be the nowmyr thame to call,  
 As they are set per ordyre all,  
 Bot the Sextille turnyd the name  
 In August, for the realle fame  
 Off Octoyane, for that he  
 Wytth Anton mad rycht gret mellé;  
 Off that moneth the fyrst day,  
 For-thi thai callyd August ay.

In tyll the fywe and twentyd yhere  
 Off his empyre, for-owtyn were, 2480  
 Virgyle deyd in Brwndyis,  
 Bot in Napolis his body lyis :  
 And the fywe and threttyd yhere  
 Off his empyre, wytth-owtyn were,  
 The poet into Rome, Oras,  
 Deyd and enteryd was.

Thus in quiete quhill he wes  
 And stablyst all the warld in pes,  
 Regnand in tyll his majesté,  
 Honoure, state, and reawté, 2490  
 Commendyt off gret douchtynes,  
 Off worschype, wyt, and worthynes,  
 Honest, habyll, and avenand,  
 At all poynt propyre and plesand,  
 Fayre off fassowne and off fas,  
 And large off lym and lyth he was,  
 Cunnand, curtas, and cumly,  
 Noucht lycht off latis bot luffly.

Thus he regnand lord and syre  
 Oure all the Warld in ane Empyre, 2500  
 He set hym haly for to wyt,  
 And to put in autentyk wryte  
 All kynrykys and all regyownys,  
 Cyteys, castellys, and all townys,  
 And quha that time wes lywānd,  
 Tha landys than inhabytand ;  
 And hale off all thai regyownys,  
 Kynrykys, cyteis, men and townys  
 He thocht trewage for to tak,  
 And ger thame homage till hym mak. 2510  
 Apon that in hy he sent  
 Hys byddyng and his mawndement,  
 All kynrykys, and all regyownys,  
 All cyteis, and all othire townys,  
 And all the men that duelt thare-in,  
 Yhong and auld, batht mare and myn,  
 To wryt wp ilkane in tyll roll,  
 And regystere thaim be name and poll,  
 And efftyre that, but mare abade  
 Fra sowmownys had bene to thaim made, 2520  
 Ilké man to that cyté,  
 Quharoff beforne that borne wes he,  
 Or ellys to that ilké towne  
 That cheffe ware off that regyown,  
 Suld cum, and thare, for his polle  
 [To] pay his trewage or his tolle  
 Off qwhynt sylver, a denere,  
 In nowmyre ten that sowndys here,  
 A denere comwnaly  
 Is in oure langage a penny, 2530  
 Bot that denere that thai suld pay

Suld have bene intyll. walu ay  
 Ten pennys usualis than  
 That in to Rome for moné ran,  
 Havand the empyowrys crown,  
 Hys ymage, and his scriptyown;  
 That [thai] suld have bene in knowlage,  
 And taknyng hale off thare homage.  
 That thai suld aw to Rome, off det,  
 Sen thai ware made till it subjet, 2540  
 And that sum callyd professyowne,  
 And sum it callid discriptyowne:  
 Professyowne in propyrté  
 Mouth grawntyng suld callyd be;  
 For quhen thai payid thare trewage,  
 Wyth mowth thai grawntyt thare homage,  
 And outh ilk[a] mannys polle  
 Hys name wes wryttyn and his toll:  
 Discriptyowne is wrytyng  
 In tyll owre propyr wndoyng, 2550  
 For all thare namys wryttyn ware  
 That payid toll, bayth les and mare,  
 F. 71. b. And yhit ilke kynryk, land, and towne,  
 By tha layid thaire trewage downe;  
 In cyteys, mayre or aldyrman,  
 At thai bodyis fyrst began,  
 And ilké man could be hys crowne,  
 And gert hym lay his trewage downe;  
 Syne in the cyteis off the land  
 Wes certayne deputys resaywand 2560  
 Off all the landys syne ilkane,  
 Wytth-in Rome wes the trewage tane.  
 On this wyis batht land and towne  
 Tyll Rome made contributyowne,  
 And Cesare August, lord and syre,



Aucht all the warld in ane empyre :

Sa excellent off bewté

Till ilke mannys sycht wes he,

That to [be]hald hym increly

Men had gret lykyn comownaly ;

2570

Sa happy als he wes in deyd

That all thyng at his lykyng yheid,

And till his purpos and his thought

At ese hys wyll in all wes wroucht.

The senatowrys all hale, for-thi,

Gawe hym for counsall fermly,

Oure all the warld in hy that he

A God suld ger hym callyd be.

Bot he kest welle in tyll hys thought

A dedly man sen he was wroucht,

2580

Off hym he had a Creatoure

That aucht off resoune that honowre ;

And till wsurpe till hym that name

It ware bot wane glore and deffame.

Swa fra he herd thare intende

And efftyr thare awysment

Sybyll Tyburtyne in hy

He cald, and tald hyr halyly

Off the senatowrys the intent

And quhat was thare awysment.

2590

The space off thre days than in hy

Scho askyd to byd in hyr study,

And thai thre dayis in hard fastyng

Scho bade [and] in tyll thra praying,

And syne in tyll hyr prophecy

Scho made efftyre that study

*Judicii Signum* in to wers,

Bot thai ar lang now to rehers.

The Empryoure syne till the hycht,

Scho gert behald, and swylk a lycht 2600

Hym wmbelappyd in that place

That gretly affrayid [than] he wes ;

Syne he sawe a madyn fayre

Apone ane awtere in the ayre,

And a lytill barne allsua

Haldyn in hyr harmys twa.

And quhill he ferlyde off that sycht,

He herd a woice that sayd [hym] rycht,

" Yhone thow wyt wyth-owtyne hune,

The awtere is off Goddis swne ;" 2610

And to the erd rycht suddanly

F. 72.

He fell, and prayid devoutly.

And syne the senatowrys gert he call,

And this sycht he tauld thaim all,

Quhar-off thai ferlyd gretly :

That chawmbyre syne he gert devoutly,

In honowre off that madyn fre,

And off that barne als halowyd be ;

For thare he saw that wysyowne

That raysid his dewotyowne ; 2620

Thare, in a kyrk off oure Lady,

Frere Mynowris now devoutly

Wytht-in the Capytolle alway

Serwys God, bathe nycht and day,

And that kyrk fowndyt in that place

Syne *Ara Celi* callyd was.

Bot quhen the contributyowne

Wes payid, bathe off land and towne,

Off Nazareth and Galelé

Joseph, that tyme in Jwdé, 2630

Past to the cyté off Daŵy,

Wytht hys spowsyd myld Mary,

Bethleem callyd in that quhille,

For off that hous and that famylle  
 He wes off kyn and off renowne;  
 For-thi thare his professyowne  
 For tyll have made he sped hym yharne,  
 Wyth hys spows gret wame wytth barne;  
 Bot all the innys evryilkane,  
 Or thai come to the towne wes tane; 2640  
 And thare than wes sic a multitude,  
 Wytth-in the town off men and gud,  
 That tyll pure men it wes ill  
 For tyll get herbry to thare wyll;  
 Tharefor Joseph and Mary  
 Gat wyth-in hows na herbry.  
 Bot betwene howsis twa,  
 Quhare men gert a pentys ma,  
 Tyll hald confablatyounne,  
 And have thaire recreatyowne 2650  
 In mete and drynk, and thare repayre,  
 As thare delyte wes till haŵe [thare];  
 Or for chapmen as buthys [makis]  
 Till oppyn and [to] schaw thare pakkys;  
 Joseph, wyth Mary his spous,  
 Hys innys tuk in swyk a hous;  
 And thare-in his bestys twa,  
 Ane ox and ane ass war thai,  
 Till a cryb that thare he made,  
 Or made perchawns he fwndyn hade, 2660  
 He band wp, and gaŵe thame hay,  
 And that ilk[a] nycht, or day,  
 That madyn Mary bare that byrth,  
 That caus wes off all oure myrth.

[Explicit Liber Quartus.]

**THE FYFT BUKE**  
**OF THE**  
**ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL**  
**OF SCOTLAND.**



**The Tptlis off the Fyft Buke.**

- F. 72. b.**
- i. **O**FF the byrth off Jhesu Cryst.
  - ii. Off Tyberyus dayis.
  - iii. Off Claudius and Gayus dayis.
  - iiii. Off Nero and his dayis.
  - v. Off Tytus and Waspasiane.
  - vi. Off Anaclete.  
Off Trajane.
  - vii. Off Alexandyr and Adriane.  
Off the Pape Syxte.  
Off the Pape Thelesfore.  
Off Anton the Mylde.  
Off Pape Ingnyws.  
Off the Pape Pyus.  
Off Marcus Antonius Empryowre.
  - viii. Quhen fyrst conwertyd was Brettane.  
Off the Empryoure Comodus.  
Off the Pape Wictore.  
Off the Pape Zepheryne.  
Off the Pape Pontyane.
  - ix. Off the Empryowre Philipe.  
Off the Pape Cornelle.  
Off the Pape Syxt.  
Off the Pape Dynys.  
Off the Pape Cayus.  
Off the Pape Marcellyne.  
Off the Pape Marcell.  
Off the Pape Ewsebyus.
  - x. Off the Pape Sylvestere.

Off the Tyrand Maxentius.

Off Maximiane.

Quhen thai off Dace and Sythy arrywyd in Bret-  
tane.

Quhen the Romanys gaue wp the suppowale off  
Brettan.

Off the Pape Marcus.

Off Constans and Constantyne Empyrouria.

Off Jwlyane the Apostata.

Off Felix and Damasus Papis.

Off the Pape Syrycius.

Off the Emprywris Galyene and Gracayne.

xi. Off Theodos and Saynt Ambros.

Off the Pape Anastacyus.

xii. Off the fyrst Pape Innocent.

Quhen Saynt Palady come in Scotland.

Off the fyrst Pape Benete.

xiii. Off Saynt Gregore the gret Doctore.

THE FYFT BUKE  
OF THE  
ORYGYNALE CRONYKIL  
OF SCOTLAND.

---

**N**ext folowand yhe sall luk  
The Proloug off the fyft Buke.

F. 73.

**O**ROSIOUS apon syndry wys  
Tyll Babylone Rome paryfyis :  
Off Babylone the storys hale  
Fra Nynus tais orygynale ;  
And off Rome the storys tays  
Thare begynnyng fra Procays  
The fadyr off Amylius,  
And forfadyre tyll Romulus.

Fra the fyrst yhere that Nynus Kyng  
Had Babylon in governyng,  
Tyll it wes stuffyd plentwslly,  
And kyrnelyd abowt propyrlly  
Throucht Symyram[us] the Qweyne,  
As yhe haŵe herd me befor meyne,  
Gane wes foure and sixty yhere.  
Rycht swa in to the lyk manere  
Fra the fyrst yhere at Procas  
In Rome begowth and regnand was,

10



Or Romule made hade the Cyté  
 Thre scor and foure yhere gane wes fre. 20  
 Arbace als the Kyng off Mede,  
 Off qwham before yhe herd me rede,  
 Ryfflyd Babylon that yhere,  
 That Procas in Rome begouth to stere.  
 Sa, as Oros[ius] signyfyis,  
 The West kynryk begouth to rys,  
 As the Est begouth to fayle  
 Be infortwne and hard batayle;  
 Quhare through the Warld is halyly  
 Now redact in a Monarchy, 30  
 And subject tyll ane empyre,  
 And a man off it lorde and syre.

Swa now my purpos and my wille,  
 Gywe God wyll grawnt hys grace thare till,  
 Standys halyly for to schawe,  
 And clenly to ger yhow knawe  
 All the caus materyalle  
 Off the dowbyll governale,  
 Quhare wes wount to governyd be  
 Bathe the Warld and the Cyté. 40  
 Off this dowbyll governale  
 The grettast is the Spyrytuale;  
 The Temporalle is the les, but lete.  
 Thir are the twa gret lychtis set  
 In myddys off the firmament,  
 That oysis for to represent,  
 And to mynystyr thare serwys  
 Tyme be tyme, and thare offyis.  
 The grettare lycht is for the day,  
 And for the nycht the les alway. 50  
 Thir twa statis gret allsua

Sygnifyis thai swerdys twa,  
Quhareoff the specyall mentyowne  
Wes sayd in Crystis Passyowne,  
" Lord, lo! now twa swerdis here."  
" Ynoch ar thai," wes his ansuere.

F. 78. b.

In to the Pape is the honowre,  
The state, the wurschype, and the cure  
Off the grettest governale;  
And off the les state syne all hale  
The soverane is the Empriowre  
Be worschype, tytill, and honowre.  
Swa now remanys for till telle,  
How fyrst that thare begynnyng fell.

60

[Explicit Prologus.]

## CHAP. I.

Here next folowande phe sall rede  
 Off Cristis byrth and his barnhede.

A.D.  
 1.

**C**ESARE August Octovyane,  
 Quhen that fourty yhere and ane  
 Off his empyre wes passyde clere,  
 Wytth-in the twa and fourtyd yhere  
 Apon the Sonondayis nycht  
 Mary myld, the madyn brycht,  
 But [threttyng], thrawyng, or dises,  
 Or ony smyt, delyveryd wes  
 Off hyr a Sown, [bath] God and Man ;  
 That chyld wes tane and swelyd than,  
 And in a cryb syne layde he was  
 Quhar that ane ox stud and ane as,  
 And thai twa bestys devoutly  
 On kneys, as wytnes the story,  
 Kend thare wes thaire creatoure,  
 Quhare-for thai dyd hym that honowre  
 That on kneys ay ware thai  
 Syttand, qwhill that he thare lay.

10

The modyr held bed in gysyne,  
 But dowl yhit wes scho pure wyrgyne.  
 He name and circumsysown,  
 And scho purifycatyown,  
 Tuk, the tyme that ordanyd wes  
 Be the lauch statute off Moyses,  
 And the barne wes Jhesu cauld,  
 As the Angelle befor tauld ;

20

Swa thai held and kepyd welle  
 All the lawys ilk[a] dele.  
 Oure Lord [Jhesu] thus wes borne  
 To sauff oure lyff that wes forlorne.

30

Beyhond Tybere, as I herd telle,  
 Owte off the erd thare sprang a well  
 Off clere oylle, fayr and gud,  
 Quhare quhylum a famous tawerne stude ;  
 And all that day in gret copy  
 That well ran owre habowndanly.  
 A cyrkyl abowte the Sone that day  
 Wes sene als, as I herd say,  
 That tyll ane arche off heŵyn wes  
 Apperand lyk on lyklynes.

40

That ilk nycht, as I herd telle,  
 In Rome that gret Tempyll fell,  
 That quhen the Romanys twelff yhere  
 In pes and quyete lywand were,  
 In the honowre off Romule fre,  
 Off fyne entaylle gert fowndyd be,  
 And off this Romule a fygowre  
 Off hewys fyne and fayre payntoure,  
 And othir symulacrys sere  
 Off ydolys that than honoryd were,  
 Thai set in to that Tempyll fayre,  
 Quhare thai mad access and repayre,  
 For to mak thare sacrifyis  
 To thai mawmentys on thare wyis,  
 Wyth dewote solempnyte  
 And wsuale festyvyte.  
 This Tempyle tytlyde wes off Pes,  
 For quhen fyrst it fowndyt wes,  
 Tyll Appollo, thair orysown

50

F. 74.

Thai made wyth gud dewotyown, 60  
 Certane knowlage for to get  
 How lang tyme that that Tempyll set  
 And fowndyd, in till [the] honowre  
 Off all thai mawmentys, suld endowre  
 And fermly stand in to that plas.  
 Off Appollyne the answeire was,  
 That that Tempyll [sulde] endure  
 Ay quhill that a wýrgyne pure  
 Suld bere a barne off hyr body,  
 Thare-off the Romanys had ferly. 70  
 Noucht for-thi thai gert full tye  
 Wytht gret lettrys brokyn wryte  
 Outh the dure at the entré,  
 Quhare thai mycht clerly red and se,  
 TEMPLUM PACIS ETERNUM ; ay  
 Thir thre wordys ar to say,  
 The Tempill off Pes wyth-owtyn end.  
 Bot quhen Goddis Sone wes send  
 In tyll oure kyth, as yhe hard telle,  
 That Tempyll and thare fals goddys fell, 80  
 And thai symulacrys all  
 Ware fruschyd and brokyn in pecis small.  
 Off the Oryent Kyngys thre,  
 Ilkane sere in thaire cuntré,  
 Be ane starne apperand newe,  
 Than borne the Kyng off Jowys knewe ;  
 For that resowne thare wayage  
 Thai tuk in dewote pylgrimage,  
 Qwhill thai come till Jerusalem :  
 Fra thine thai passyd till Bethleem ; 90  
 Thare, to the Sone off the wýrgyne,  
 Myr, and sens, and gold sa fyne,

In gret devotyounes offeryd thai,  
 Be-efft hys byrth the thretten day;  
 And quhen thai mad had thaire offerande  
 Hame agayne in to thare land,  
 By Jerusalem, passyd thai,  
 As thai war warnyd, ane othir way.  
 And how than Herrode had consaywyde  
 Throuch thaim that he wes dyssaywyde, 100  
 Quharfore the Innocentys he gert be  
 All slayne throuch his iniqwyte;  
 Haly Kyrk prechys clere  
 In to the wangyll ilk[a] yhere;  
 For that resowne now will I  
 Oure pas it here the mar lychtly.

In Scotland that yhere Taram ras,  
 F. 74. b. And oure [the] Peychtis regnand was  
 A hundyr yhere as crownyd kyng.  
 And quhen his lyff had tane endyng, 110  
 Duchyl ras as kyng with crowne,  
 And regnand be successyowne.  
 Bot off thaire douchty dedis sere  
 I fynd nought for to wryt in here.

Kymbelyne of Tenwant  
 The sone and ayre was than regnant  
 As kyng wytht crowne off all Brettane.  
 Before that wytht Octovyane  
 He nwrysyd wes, till hys barnehede  
 Was passyd, and entryde in manhede, 120  
 And dyde gret prowes and bownté  
 In all kyn were or jowrné,  
 And tuk syne off that Empyrowre  
 The ordyr off knyghted wytht honowre:  
 To thame off Rome, for that resowne,

He stud in swylk effectyowne,  
 That in the tyme, quhen he wes kyng,  
 And Brettane had in governyng,  
 His barnage hale sayd, that he mycht  
 Wythhald the trewage wytht all ryght, 130  
 That Julyus Cesare before wan,  
 And payid was till Octovyan.  
 Agayne the wyll off his barnage  
 Till Rome he payid that trewage :  
 For that wyth his the were wes he  
 Comendyt in to all degre.

And that ilké yhere alsua  
 Joseph passyd and Maria  
 In till Egypt; and sewyn yhere  
 Thare wytht the Barne thai duelland were. 140  
 Off his dedys in that quhyll  
 Fewe I find in the wangylle :  
 Bot quha that lykys for to rede  
 In tyll a Buk off his barnhede,  
 He sall fynd how be the way,  
 As wndyrneth a palme thai lay  
 At ese to slepe, or rest thaim thare  
 As pilgrymys that for-tyryd ware,  
 The mudyre makles off that chylde,  
 Mary brycht, the madyn myld, 150  
 Was in till scharpe hungyr set,  
 And had gret appetyt till ete  
 The crope thare off that palme tre,  
 That datys bare in gret plente ;  
 Quhill scho was in [to] that thrawe  
 Wyth-all the buwys bowyd lawe,  
 Ewyn till hyr hand, swa at hyr wyll  
 Datys scho pullyd and ete hyr fyll ;

Syne as wytth lewe, but brayd or bend,  
Ewyn as before stud wp on end. 160

That tyme alsua Joseph thare  
In tyll hard thyrst was noyit sare,  
Bot off [the] erd sone sprang a welle  
Quhare-[of] Joseph, as I herd tell,  
Drank his fyll off wattyr clere.

Thare-efftyr, as thai herbryd were  
In tyll a gret cove and a depe,  
F. 75. Or thai begouth to fall on slepe,  
Off that cove, all suddanly,  
Twa gret dragownys and wgly 170

Ruschyd owte; thare Mary wes  
And Joseph bathe in gret radness;  
Bot thai twa wyld bestys kene,  
Fra that thai the child had sene,  
As thai had chastyid bene wyth awe,  
Kest downe amang thare lymmys lawe  
Thare hedys, and syne wyth gud speyd  
Till wyldyrnes away thai yheyd.  
Fra thine till Egipte in tyll hy,  
As Joseph passyd and Mary, 180

A lyowne thaim kepyd be the way,  
That serwysiabyll wes to thaim ay.  
In tyll the land quhill thai ware fre,  
And in it as thai mad entré,  
Off Egypte hale the templis all.

Fell and brak in pecis small,  
[And] all the ydolys evryilkane,  
That hale in to that land wes nane  
Tempill standand off walu,  
Na off nane ydole a statu. 190  
Thir myrakyllis wryttyn yhe ma red



**In till a buk off his barnehed.**

### Fra thine Joseph and Mary

**In Egypt duelt contynualy**

Sevyn yhere, quhill the Angell brycht

## Apperyd till Joseph on a nycht

In till his slepe, and bad hym ta

**The Modyr, and the Barne alsua,**

And pas in Israelle agayne,

"For thai," he sayd, "that wald have slayne 200

The chyld, ar dede." Than he, but hone,

**All as the Angell bad has done ;**

Bot for caus, as the story sayis,

**That Archelaus in thai dayis,**

**The quhilk brodyre that tyme wes**

**Till Herrode, full off wykytnes,**

Off Jerusalem, as kyng

And lord, had all the governyng,

**And dwelt in it continually ;**

For-thi, Joseph and Mary 210

Past wyttht the barne by that cyté

## Till Nazareth in Galelé;

In that cyté than fywe yhere

Wyttht the Chyld thai duelland were,

That grew off wyt and wërtu than,

And plesyd batht till God and man.

Swa twelf yhere quhen he wes auld,

**As Saynt Luke in his ewangyll tauld,**

**In Jerusalem, among the gret**

**Mastrys off lawe, that held thare set 220**

In to the Tempyll, for to schawe

The casys as thai stud in the lawe,

He sat, and wes ryght diligent

**Till here, and mad sic argument**

F. 75. b.  
A.D.  
14

That all that herd and stude hym by  
 Off hys wyt had gret ferly.  
 And eftyr hys natyvvté,  
 Quhen fourtene yhere wes passyd fre,  
 Octovyane the empyrowre  
 Deyd in Rome wytth gret honoure, 230  
 Quhen that sex and fyfty yhere  
 Off his empyre were passyd clere ;  
 Ale the world, as I sayd ere,  
 He mayd to Rome tributere ;  
 In hys begynnyng the cité  
 All abowte off Rome fand he  
 Wytth dykys made off fayle or mude,  
 Bot, or he deyde, off marbyr gude,  
 Witth syment, lyme, or wytth hewyn stane,  
 He made the wallis evryilkane ; 240  
 Off citesanyes and burges fre,  
 He left duelland in that cyté  
 Fowr hundyr thousand nynty sys,  
 And fourty thousand reknyd twys,  
 As sayis Frere Martyne in his buke,  
 Quha wyll his Cornyklys rede and luke :  
 Yhit set he wes off this bownté,  
 He wes nought off all vycys fre,  
 For he hade in usage off  
 Amang twelff maydynnys, yhong, and sofft 250  
 Off hyd, and fayre off hew, to ly  
 In lykyng, lust, and lychory.

## CHAP. II.

The next Chapter will tell  
 What in Tiberius dapis felle.

A.D.  
 15.

THE fyftende yhere effyre that byrth,  
 That causyd all oure mekyll myrth,  
 Off Rome Tyberius empyoure,  
 Nest till Octovyane successoure,  
 His wyffis sone off lauchfull bede,  
 And had till wyff hys douchtyr lede;  
 For caus off that and hys bownté  
 Octovyane yharnyd hym to be  
 Hys ayre and his neyst successoure;  
 Swa fell that he wes emperyowre,  
 And ras off Rome bath lord and syre,  
 And stoutly governyd the empyre;  
 In deyde he doure wes and douchty,  
 And in till armys welle happy,  
 Kunnand, and off lettr[at]owre fyne,  
 Bot sle and dwtus off engyne.  
 Quhen men wald do be lyklynes  
 Hys wyll, or quhat his byddyng wes,  
 In frawde and swylk offt walde he say  
 That that hym lykyd be na way,  
 And ger the doarys punysyd be  
 Throuch wykytnes and crualte;  
 He wes ryght pert and eloqwent,  
 And full austere in jugement,  
 Curtays he wes in tyll his deyde;  
 In cornyklys sere off hym we reid

260

270

F. 76.

That quhen hys procuratowrys ordanyd he  
 In his nedis to passand be, 280  
 Seldyn revocatyowne  
 He mayd off that commysseyowne ;  
 He wald oft gere pyne and sla  
 Thewys, and sakles men alsua ;  
 He tuk the trewage off Brettane  
 That Julyus Cesare before wane ;  
 He regnyd twenty yhere and thre ;  
 In Chawmpayne syne quhen deide wes he  
 Fele folk glad ware and [richt] joly,  
 And few for that cas wes sary. 290

Off Crystys dedis in that quhille  
 Few I fynd in the Ewangylle,  
 Tyll that tyme that he howyn wes,  
 Bot as Josephus berys wytnes ;  
 He in tyll hys story sayis  
 Thare wes a wysman in thai dayis,  
 Gyff men mycht wyth resowne all  
 In propyrté a man hym call,  
 Off marwelus and gret dedys sere,  
 He wes bathe doare and kennere, 300  
 And mony off Jowys and Gentyll  
 Till hym he drewe in till that quhille ;  
 Cryste that was, as Josephus  
 Signyfyis in tyll hys buk till ws.

The poete Ovyde in hys dayis  
 Deyd exilyd, as the story sayis.  
 Off hys empyre the fyftende yhere,  
 And fra the byrth off oure Lorde dere  
 The threttyd yhere, in wyldyrnes,  
 Saynt Jhon the Baptyst prechand wes. 310  
 Pylat off Powns procuryd to be

A.D.  
30.

Chyftane and prynce off all Jwde;  
 Off Powns he lord wes beforne,  
 Bot men sayd at he wes borne  
 Off Lyownys, in to Frans, sur Rone.  
 That yhere als off Baptyst Jhon  
 Jhesu Cryst, as sayde the Buke,  
 The baptysme in till Jordane tuke,  
 And the neyst yhere efftyr syne  
 He turnyd the wattyre clere in wyne. 320  
 Saynct Jhon the Baptyst als wes tane,  
 And efftyre that a yhere owre gane,  
 Throuch foly gret and crualté,  
 Herrode gert hym hevydyd be.  
 Than off Tyberius empyowre  
 Pylate wes made procuratoure  
 And specyall depute in Jwdé,  
 Sa fell that wndyre his powsté  
 Cryst tholyd thare [his] passiowne,  
 And mad his resurrectyowne, 330  
 Quhen that thretty yhere and thre  
 Were gane fra his natyvyte;  
 And in till August off that yhere  
 Saynct Stewyn was stanyde to dede, but were.  
 That ilké yhere alsua Saule  
 Convertyd, and was callyd Paule.  
 The empyoure Tyber efftyr that,  
 Quhen that he full wyttyng gat  
 That Jhesu Cryst to dede wes done,  
 He gert send efftyr [Pilate] sone, 340  
 And in hys presens hym gert he  
 Off jugement fals accusyde be,  
 Bot efftyre thai accusatyownys,  
 Ande his fals excusationis,

A.D.  
33.

F. 76. b.

Tyll Vyen in tyll Burgoyne he  
 Hym send, and gert hym presownyt be ;  
 Quhare lang he bad in pyne and care,  
 And slwe hym-self for sorow thare.  
 Herrode als that slwe that Jhone  
 Exylide he gert be onone 350  
 Tyll Vyen in till Burgoyne als,  
 Wyttht his wyff, bayth fell and fals,  
 Herodyade, and thai twa  
 Wrachtyly thare deyde alsua.

Efttyr the Resurrectyowne  
 Off Cryst, and [his] Ascensyowne,  
 Saynt Petyr the appostylle fre,  
 Borne off the land off Galelé  
 In tyll the rew Bethsayda, 360  
 (He wes the sone off Jhon alsua,  
 And tyll Saynt Androw brodyr hale,)  
 Past in the landys Oryentale,  
 And in thai landys than held he  
 Foure yhere full the prestis sé,  
 And thare he sang the fyrst Mes  
 That in the world evyre sungyn wes ;  
 And in that Mes wes said na mare,  
 Bot the PATER NOSTER thare.

Tyberius in that tyme wes dede,  
 And Gayus ras in till his stede, 370  
 This ilké Gayus wes alsua  
 Be surname callyd Gallicula.  
 Off the empyr lord wes he  
 Bot monethys ten, and yherys thre,  
 And awcht days, bot he wes  
 Ill wycyous, full off wykytnes,  
 Off gret lust and off lychory :

Hys awyn twa systyrys he lay by.  
 A dochtyr on ane off thai he gat,  
 And that he lay by efftyre that ; 380  
 He nurré [was] and newew nere  
 Tyll the Iord off Rome Tybere ;  
 In crualte and avaryce  
 And mony odyr syndry wyce,  
 Sa lang he wedyde, quhill he was  
 Slayne wytth his men in his palas.  
 All thus quhen dede wes Gayus,  
 Till hym succedyd Claudyus,  
 That the empyre fourtene yhere  
 Governyd, and sevyn moneth clere, 390  
 And aughtene dayis fullyly.

Saynt Petyr that tyme [coym] in hy  
 In Antyoche off the Oryent,  
 Thare sevyn yhere in gud entent  
 He bade, and helde the prestys sé ;  
 F. 77. Syne fra thine to Rome past he  
 As byschope thare and preest his lywe  
 Twenty yhere he led, and fywe,  
 And dayis awcht, till halde the date.  
 Twa pystyllys off canowne thare he wrate ; 400  
 In Septembyre than ordanyd he  
 Ordrys ilké yhere to be,  
 Thare byschypys sex, and prestys ten,  
 And deknys sevyn, he ordanyt then.

A.D.  
 40.

The fourtyde yhere efftyr that byrth  
 That made owre joy and all oure myrth,  
 The ewangelyst Saynt Mathewe  
 Made and wrat hys wangelys newe ;  
 And, efftyre that thre yhere alsua  
 Hys wangellys Mark begouth to ma, 410

And Saynt Petyr wrat thaim thare  
 For he before was his scolare.  
 In hungyr gret that ilk[a] yhere  
 The Romanys all anoyid were.  
 Appollynare Saynt Petyr then  
 Send to preche in tyll Raŵen,  
 That wes a cyté gret and fayre,  
 Comowne, and off gret repayre,  
 In Ytaly pere till it wes nane,  
 To sawff off Rome the towne allane.

420

## CHAP. III.

*Off the Empryoure Claudyus  
 Next successor till Schyr Gayus.*

CLAWDYUS the empyoure,  
 That wes tyll Gayws successoure,  
 Off hys empyre the ferd yhere  
 In Brettayne come wytht hys powere,  
 Kymbolynys [son] than Widen kyng,  
 That Brettayne had in governyng,  
 Sone assemblyd ane ost in hy,  
 And wytht the Romanys stoutly  
 Faucht, and put thame to the flycht,  
 Quhare mony dowre to deyde was dycht :  
 And quhill thai ware in to that cas,  
 A Romane, that amang thaim was  
 Hamo callyd, gat on that senyhé,  
 That Bretownys bare ; syn can he fenyhe  
 Hym a Brettowne for to be,  
 For all thare langage welle kend he :

430



Quhen in tyll Rome ostagis sere  
 Of all landis duelland were,  
 And thai off Brettane ostage had,  
 He gret repayre amang thaim mad ; 440  
 Be sic access he kend welle,  
 And leryd thare langage ilk[a] dele.  
 Sa in the thrang off that battaylle  
 He bare hym as a Brettane hale,  
 Quhyll that he come rycht till the kyng,  
 That off hym had na myslywyng :  
 That kyng off Brettayne thare he slwe,  
 And to the Romanys syne he drwe.

F. 77. b.

Arvyragus, that wes then  
 Brodyr to the kyng Wyden, 450  
 And saw this cas, and all this deyd,  
 Gat wpon hym ful gud spede  
 All hys brodyr armoure hale,  
 And held that ward in the batalle,  
 That [the] kyng hys brodyr had :  
 Thare fechtynge stowt and hard he made,  
 And lete hys ost wyt nakyn thyng  
 Off that cas fell to the kyng,  
 Quhill mony doure to dede wes dycht,  
 And all the Romanys tuk the flycht, 460  
 And Hamo slayne. In till that chas  
 The empyowre discumfyt was.

Sa, to tell yhow shortly  
 The endyng off this juperdy,  
 Quhen Claudius the manhed kend  
 Off the Brettownys, he message send  
 Tyll Arwyragus, than the kyng  
 That Brettayne had in governyng,  
 For till amese all were and stryffe,

And tak hys dochtyr till hys wyffe, 470  
 And to Rowme that tribwte pay  
 Wytht-owtyn drychyng or delay,  
 That the Romanys before wan  
 Fra hys eldrys off Brettan.

Till this assented wes the kyng,  
 And sesyd were, and mad anyng :  
 For he thocht, syne that generaly  
 All othir landys halyly  
 Bade wndyr the subjectyowne  
 Off Rome, he mycht wyth-owt chesowne 480  
 That trewage to the Romanys pay,  
 That thai had tane before his day.  
 Swa, now schortly to mak end,  
 Schyre Claudys for his dochtyre send,  
 And Arwyragus off Brettane  
 Weddyd that fayr lady than.  
 Betwene the Romanys and that kyng  
 All thus than fell the fyrst anyng.

That ilke empyrowre off were  
 Past fra thine wytht hys powere 490  
 The Owte Ylys till assaylle,  
 And wyth hym in hys suppowaylle  
 That kyng passyd off Brettan,  
 And off fors the Owte Ylis wan,  
 And maid [thaim] to Rome subyet ay,  
 And gert thaim fra thine trybute pay.

How that empyrowr thare-efft  
 That Kyng hys lutenand lefft  
 Off all the landys, that marchyd than  
 Nere wyth the kynryk off Brettan, 500  
 Hame tyll Rome quhen that he  
 Agayne passyd wytht hys reawte ;

F. 78. And how that kyng syne mad delay,  
 And hale denyit for to pay  
 Till Rome the trewage off Brettane,  
 Quhyll Claudyus send Wespasyane  
 Wytth that kyng to fecht or trete,  
 Swa that for luwe, or than for threte,  
 Off fors he suld pay at he awcht ;  
 And how the qweyne thare made thame saucht, 510  
 The Brute tellys it sa oppynly,  
 That I wyll lat it now ga by.

This empyowre in all tyme wes  
 In all his dedys full rekles,  
 Na he couth hald in na memore  
 The thyngys that he dyd before.  
 It hapnyt in tyll suddane stryffe  
 That apon cas he slwe hys wyff ;  
 At ewyn to bed syne quhen he past  
 Quhy sho come noucht, he askyt fast. 520  
 He thought till ordane and till ma,  
 Be statute, quhen men suld lat ga  
 Owte off thare bodyis ryfftyis off wynd,  
 At mowth before, or than behynd ;  
 For in to Rome off cas it fell  
 For schame a man, as he herd tell,  
 Forbare for tyll [lat] owt the wynd,  
 Wyth ryfft before, or blyst behynd,  
 Swa that he peryst in that thrawe ;  
 Tharfor he thought, quhen men suld blawe, 530  
 Tyll ordane tyme be statute swa  
 That for that cas [men] suld dey na ma.  
 He wes the mast sobyr man  
 Off mete or drynk that lywyd than.  
 Massalyne wes callyd hys wyff,

Scho spendyt in swylk lust hyr lyff  
That hyr oys was comownaly  
In bordale nycht and day to ly,  
Off that play [nevyr] yrk na sad  
For all the copy at scho had, 540  
And ladyis sere scho tretyd ay  
In cumpany to pruve that play.  
Yhit, be counsalle off this wyff,  
That thus in lust led all hyr lyff,  
Hys sone and hys ayre gert he  
Off the empyre desheryd be,  
And Nero, that had hys dochtyr weddyt,  
And lauchfully wytth hyr had beddyt,  
He ordanyd off the empyre  
Bathe hys ayre, [and] lord and syre ; 550  
And that wes done agane the lawe  
For luwe off woman, or for awe.

Saynt Petyr, as the story says,  
Fyrst come to Rome in till his dayis,  
Thare ordanyt he befor Pas day

F. 78. b.

The Lentryne to be fastyt ay  
Off fourty dayis, syne wox thre,  
And the ferd part ordanyd he  
All Crystyne man in fastyng hald,  
That war full fourtene yhere alde, 560  
Before the Natyvvyté ;  
[That] the Adwent now call we.

## CHAP. IV.

Off Herops tyme and Petryis dede,  
 Ande quha next [ras] in to thare stede.

**N**ERO neyst wes successoure  
 Till Claudys, and empyowre  
 [He wes] off gret Rome threttene yhere,  
 Aucht moneth, and a day, but were.  
 He prowyd welle off his manhede  
 Quhill he wes knyght in till yhouthede,  
 Bot fra he kend hym empyowre,  
 He excedyt all mesoure, 570  
 And worschype chawngyd in tyrandry,  
 Honowr in falshede and felny ;  
 He gert slay off the senatowrys,  
 That off det ware his counsalowrys,  
 A gret part, and alsua  
 His awyn brodyr he gert sla.  
 All Rome he set in tyll a fyre,  
 A low off that for to se schyre.  
 Hys modyr oysyd for to reprüwe  
 And argwe hym wnkynd off luwe ; 580  
 Till hir that sufferyd thurstys sare,  
 And paynys hard quhen scho hym bare,  
 And wes in dowl off hyr lyff ay  
 Betwene hyr sydys quhill he lay,  
 But pety tharefor, or mercy,  
 He slwe hyr in hys tyrandry.  
 Syne he gert oppyn hyr and owte ta  
 Hyr bowellys, and sek in tha

And rype [thaim] all oure, theyk and thyne,  
To sé the place that he lay in. 590

Off Rome syne the maystrys all  
In till hys presence he gert call,  
And bade wytht barne thai suld hym ma,  
Or than thai suld thaire lyff for-ga.

Than efftyre thaire awysment  
Thai gert [hym] apon ane assent  
In tyll a drawcht off drynk swelly  
A paddog yhong, lyand in fry ;  
Thai gert hym syne in mete and drynk  
Sic mesoure oys as thai couth thynk, 600

Or [be] thare crafftys wndyrstude  
Mycht have bene to that paddok fude.  
Wytht that the tad begouth to wax,  
And wyth-in hym rerde and rax,

F. 79. Syne in hys body gnyp and gnaw,  
And gert hym offt in thrichis thraw,  
And in tyll perylle wes off dede ;  
Than off that dowl to get remede  
He gert thai[m the] gret clerkys all  
Agayne in tyll his presens call, 610

And bade that thai suld, apon payne  
Off all thare eyne, or to be slayne,  
Ger hym off hys barne be,  
Bwt lang delay, delyveryd fre.

Than thai behuwyd for to fynd  
All excusatyownys put behynd,  
Sum crafft to lous hym off his payne,  
Or all, but mercy, to be slayne ;  
Wytht a drynk than, at the last,  
Owt at his mouth thai gert hym cast 620  
That paddog wyth a blob off blude,

Wan made all but fassown gud.  
 He askyd than be quhat resown  
 Hys barne sa foule was off fassown,  
 And thare ansuere was that tyde,  
 For he couth noucht his [tyme] byde,  
 Na lang it mycht noucht lest in lywe,  
 For [cause] that it fell abortywe;  
 The paddoge dede thare-efft gert he  
 Wythin a towre enteryd be,  
 The quhilk was made off lyme and stane  
 In to that rew callyd Laterane.

630

He wes in deid all fellowne,  
 And mad gret persecutyowne  
 Off Crystyn men, for thare fay  
 Abhomynabill he had alway.  
 Off Jacob rychtwys in his dayis,  
 The brothyr off God, as the Buk sayis,  
 Wyth a walkarys perk, but dowe,  
 The harnys all war strykyn owte.  
 He gert in tyll his felny sla  
 Hys awyn maystyr, Seneca,  
 That till Saynt Paule wrat letteris sere,  
 And wes tyll hym famwlore.  
 He leissit the trewage off Brettane,  
 That hys eldrys befor wan,  
 And othir allawa kynrykys sere,  
 That he fand till Rome tributere,  
 Ran in till prescriptyown  
 Off thare contributyown.

640

650

For hys ecces [sa] owtragewe  
 And his condytyown wycwys,  
 Saynt Petyr he gert crucify.  
 And off Saynt Paule, in his felowny,

F. 79. b.

He gert stryk off the hewyd, and swa  
 To dede he put thai postyllis twa.  
 Quhen all the yherys ware cummyn and gane  
 Off his empyre [for] to, sauff ane,  
 The Grekys than set thame thraly  
 Away till have tane prewaly 660  
 The bodys off thai postyllis twa ;  
 That purpos qwhill thai ware on swa,  
 The dewyllis that in the ydolys ware  
 Off Goddys wyll and hys poware,  
 Cryit " Yhe Romanys succoure nowe,  
 For yhoure goddys are tane fra yhowe."  
 The Crystyn men, that than ware gud,  
 That off thai postyllis wndyrstude ;  
 Bot the pagaynys thought allway  
 That off thare goddys that sayd thai. 670  
 Wyth that the Romanys halyly  
 Chasyd the Grekys dispytwsoly ;  
 Swa the Grekis at the last  
 Behuwyd on nede thai bodyis cast  
 In tyll a cysterne depe, quhare thai  
 Lay hyd, but wyttyng, mony day,  
 Quhill that the Pape Cornelius,  
 As the Cornykyll tellis ws,  
 Drew thame off that cysterne depe,  
 And honorably gert men thame kepe, 680  
 Quhill he had made his orysown  
 Till God, wyth gud devotyoun, e,  
 For tyll ken hym werraly  
 Quhilk wes off Petyr the body,  
 And quhilk off Saynt Paule mycht be  
 The body cald in propyrte.  
 Devotly sua quhill that he sat,



Inspyryd off God, ansuere he gat,  
 That the largyare body wes  
 Off the fyschare, and the les 690  
 Off the prechoure; syn wes sayde  
 Pape Silvestyr gert thame be layd  
 In till weyis; swa kend wes thare  
 Quhilk prechoure wes, and quhilk fyschare,  
 And off ilkane a kirk gert he  
 Honorably syne fowndyt be;  
 And off Saynt Petyr, wyth honoure,  
 The banys he put in sepultoure  
 In to that kyrk wes for hym made;  
 The banys off Saynt Paule he hade 700  
 In tyll hys kyrk, and thare gert he  
 Entyre thame wyth solempnyte.

Off Nero yhit the empyroure,  
 That turnyd in till foule lust his honoure,  
 For na part off a man thought he  
 Mycht clene or luwely callyd be,  
 All his men he luwyd for-thi  
 In all tyme till oys rybaldry,  
 And all kyn wycys at thare wyлле  
 He gawe consent and lewe thare-tille. 710

F. 80.

A robe he wald be nakyn wys  
 Put wpone his body twys,  
 Bot [in] a newe robe ilk[a] day  
 Hys usage wes hym till aray,  
 And till the hors that he on rade,  
 Off sylvyr schone he gert be made.  
 The byggyng mad off his palas  
 Large and welle anowrnyd was,  
 In all [the] pesys evryilkane  
 Wytht sylvyr, gold, and precyows stane, 720

Evore syne, that na man mycht  
Prys the cost, wyth all his slycht.  
For the byrnnyng off the towne,  
And dedys that he dyde felowne,  
Hys barnage set thaim hym to ta  
And pyne in presowne, or to sla.  
For that caus, owt off his palas  
He fled, and slwe hym-self off cas,  
And outhe the erde, but sepulture,  
As a dog, lay that empyoure, 730  
Quhill all the flesche off his body  
Wes ettyn wyth wolvys halvy.  
Off Nero this wes the endyng,  
That is ensawmpill and taknyng  
Till thame that drawys thare delyte,  
[Tyl] lust, and thare foule appetyte,  
Through warldys welth and wantowne wylle.  
Fra wertuose dede in vycys ille ;  
But resowne, rageand in revery,  
Confowndand peté wyth felny, 740  
And wyll [noucht] thare hawtane hawyng haw  
Off God or man, but lue or lawe.

Galba off Rome the empyoure  
Till Nero neyst wes successoure.  
Off that state yhit, nevyrtheles,  
Bot sevyn moneth lord he wes.  
Quhen Nero herd off Surry tell  
Agayne hym ras and wes rebelle,  
Vespasyane he send off were  
In Surry wyth a gret powere, 750  
And in the kynryk off Judé  
Lyand apon were wes he,  
Fyrst quhen he herd Nero wes dede,

And Galba ras syne in till his stede,  
 Wytellus than in tyll Yrland,  
 And Oto in till Ducheland,  
 Held a yhere state as empyoure,  
 In Rome oysyd wyth honoure;  
 Syne ilkane slwe othir off cas,  
 Off thai twa swylk the endyng was.

760

    Syne Ytalyk off Tuskanè  
 Borne, the sone off Esculane,  
 Ellewyn yhere, and monethys thre,  
 And threttene dayis, held the se  
 Off Rome as Pape, and ordanyt than  
 That thare suld entyr na woman  
 F. 80. b. In tyll the kyrk, as Petyr bade,  
 Bot gyff hyr hewyd scho coveryd hade.

    Quhen that the Pape Lyne wes dede,  
 Cletus succedyt in his stede,  
 And held the sé ellewyn yhere  
 Off Rome, as Pape; bot thai twa were,  
 As sum men sayis, in till thare lyve,  
 Nowthyr papys successywe,  
 Bot thai ware till Saynt Petyr ay  
 Helparys in hys latyr day,  
 Quhen he gave his vacatyon,  
 All hale till hys devotyon,  
 Bathe Lyne and Clete thai papys twa  
 He despensyt wytht to ma,  
 And for to do the serwys all  
 That to the Pape off rycht suld fall;  
 In tyll the nowmyr tharfore thai  
 Ar reknyd off haly Papis ay.  
 Cletus comendyt gretly  
 All thai that oysid devotly

770

780

Haly pylgrymage to ta,  
 And mast ay [he] comendyt thai  
 That Saynt [Petyr] and Saynt Paule wald wysyt,  
 For that he callyd off mare [wyt and] meryt 790  
 Than for till fast twa yhere or thre ;  
 All tha tharfore cursyd he  
 That lettyd thame off thare wayage  
 Till Petyre and Paule in pylgrymage.

In to the Papys lettrys he  
 Gert fyrst *Salutem* wryttyn be  
 And *Apostolicam Benedictionem*, sua  
 Fra that he wes dede all tha  
 That succedyt to that state  
 Thai wordys in thare Bullys wrate. 800

## CHAP. V.

Off Tytus ande Vespasiane,  
 Saynt Clement and Bonitiane.

A.D.  
 71.

**E**FTERE that borne wes God off Hewyn  
 Thre score off yherys and ellewyn  
 Vespasyane wan halyly  
 All the landys off Surry  
 To the empyre ; and that day  
 Abowte Jerusalem he lay,  
 Wyth hys ost off gret powere  
 In tyll assege, as man off were,  
 Quhen be lettrys till hym send  
 He saw, and be thare tenore kend 810  
 That he wes chosyn empyrowre.  
 That state tharfore wyth honowre

- He ressayyd in Palestyne;  
 Titus his sone he callyd syne,  
 And till hym comendyt hale  
 Off his gret ost the governale.  
 Till Rome syne he passyd in hy,  
 Quhare he resaywyd wes honorably,  
 And commendyt mekyll wes,  
 F. 81. For hys gret worschype and prowes. 820  
 Syne in the flux hym hapnyd to de,  
 For thare is nane that cas may fle,  
 Bot in tyll his lattyre thrawe,  
 To dede quhen [he] begouth to drawe,  
 Evyn wp on his fete he stud,  
 And sayd, wyth hale woice and gud,  
 " Ane Empryowre suld ay per-de  
 Than the erde fere hyere be."  
 In tyll that thrawe he tuk the dede,  
 Titus hys sone ras in his stede 830  
 Off Rome lord and empyoure,  
 And lede thre yhere wytth honoure.  
 He tuk and gert dystroyd be  
 Off Jerusalem the cyté,  
 And off the Tempill he tuk hale  
 Ornamentys, vestymentys, and weschalle,  
 And till Rome all thai send he,  
 Syne brynt gert all the Tempill be,  
 And all the cytezanys slayne downe;  
 There was the mast confusioune 840  
 In ony tyme that yhe herd telle,  
 That evyr to the Jowys fell;  
 For off the Jowys slayne, the blude  
 Throuch all the towne in till a flude  
 On hewyd wyth weltrand wawys than,

As rywerys raysid wyth rayne ran :  
 Wyth suerd thare mony Jowys ware  
 Slayne, and [mony] deyde [war] thare  
 In hungyr, for the Romanys hale  
 Consumyt and held fra thame all wyttalle, 850  
 And off the Jowys at thame yhald  
 Till the Romanys, ay thai sauld  
 Thretty for a penny thare,  
 Yhit sellarys may than byarys ware ;  
 For the Romanys alway thocht  
 That the Jowys na thing doucht  
 To be haldyn in serwyce,  
 That gert thame sel thame off sic prys.  
 In tyll Wespasyanys days,  
 And Titus, as the story says, 860  
 To Jerusalem this fell.

But off Tytus mare to telle,  
 He wes off sa gret curtasy,  
 Pyté, gud wyll, and mercy,  
 That quhen agaynys his persowne  
 Men ware off conspiratyowne  
 Accusyd, and convic be the lawe,  
 Fra jugement he wald thame drawe,  
 And kys thame, and forgyff thame all  
 The danger that thai suld in fall, 870  
 And als hamelyly [withe] thame thare  
 Tak thame as befor thai ware.  
 He excedyt off largeas  
 All thai that before hym was,  
 Or in hys tyme, off ony gre ;  
 For tyll hym tynt that day thocht he  
 That na man come til ask hym oucht,  
 And quha that evyr tyll hym soucht,

He denyit nevyr that thyng  
 That wes resowne [of] hys askyng ; 880  
 For it wes his oys to say  
 That nane suld sary pas away  
 Fra ony prynce, or lord, or kyng,  
 Quhen he schawyt his yharnyng.  
 He wes off wurschype sa wertuus,  
 And off dedys sa mervalus,  
 That wyth all mankynd off his eyld,  
 He wes the joy callyd, and the beyld.  
 And efftyre that quhen ded wes he,  
 All thai that duelt in that cyté, 890  
 Gretand in tyll sobbyng sare,  
 Noucht les in all anoyt ware.  
 Na thought all thare kyn ilkane  
 War wndone, or wytth dede ourtane :  
 For his gret benygnyté,  
 Worschype, wertu, and bownte,  
 He past his fadyre in to fame  
 And callyd before hym is be name,  
 As in till all story ay  
 Rede and wrytyn fynd ye may. 900  
 Quhen Petyr, Lyne, and Clete ware dede,  
 Saynt Clement sat in to thare stede  
 Nyne yhere Pape, and monethys twa,  
 And ten days full ekyd to tha.  
 Efftyr the baptysme ordanyt he  
 Crystyne-men to confermyt be,  
 But that, he sayd, na man mycht  
 Full Crystyn man be callyd rycht ;  
 And syne to dede dispytwysly  
 He wes done throuch hard martyry, 910  
 And in the sé his body lay

Castyn thare efftyr mony day,  
 Quhille the Pape Cyryllus ras,  
 In tyll hys tyme it fundyn was ;  
 And that the sé quhar lang he lay  
 Oysyd ilk yher tyll esche away  
 Fra that kyrk a gret space,  
 That off Saynt Clement fundyt was.  
 Fra are none off [the] evyn beforne  
 That hys fest fell on the morne,  
 Quhill the day [fere] efftyre nowne,  
 That Mes and offerand ware all downe.

920

Than Domityane, the tothir  
 Wespasyanys sone and Titus brodyr,  
 Threttene yhere off the empyre,  
 And fywe moneth, wes lord and syre ;  
 He wes in tyll his begynnyng  
 Off gret mesure in all thyng,  
 Bot syne in tyll his state wes he  
 Sa vycyows in all degre,  
 That off [his] fadyre the gud name,  
 And off his brothyr the fayr fame,  
 Wes delete all halyly,  
 Throuch hys wyce and hys felny.

930

F. 82. The nobylest off the senatowrys,  
 That wes the mast wys consalowrys,  
 He gert to fellowne dede be done.  
 Syne him-self he gert call sone,  
 Bothe lord and god off mekyll mycht,  
 Thare wes na fygure he gert dycht,  
 Or mak off hym-self to be,  
 Than it off sylvyr fyne made he,  
 Or than off gud gold and pure,  
 Welle fasownyt, off fayr portrature.

940



Fyrst to lordschype quhen he drewe  
 Hys systyr sonnys all he alwe,  
 Neyst efftyre Nero the fellowne,  
 He made fyrst persecutyown  
 Off Crystyn men, and thare fay  
 Supprysyd he held at wndyre ay ; 950  
 And set that this Domityane  
 Wes sone to gude Wespasiane,  
 Yhit he wes off condytyowne  
 Mare lyk tyll Nero the fellowne,  
 Than till fadyr or brodyre he  
 Lyk wes [in] till ony gre.

The ewangelyst Saynt Jhon,  
 That duelt than in till Epheson,  
 Hys ewangyle apertly  
 Prechand, passyd throuche Asy ; 960  
 Therefore this Domityane  
 Gert hym arestyd be and tane,  
 And send to presowne in the yle  
 Off Pathmos, swa, wyth-in that quhille,  
 Apocalipsis all he wrate ;  
 Sa presownyd he bad in that state,  
 Quhyll that this Domityane  
 Throuch wnhape hys dede had tane.

And in till this tyme Saynt Dynys  
 And hys falowys, in Parys, 970  
 Off dede tholyd [the] passyown.  
 The tempill than als off Panteown  
 Quhare syne was Mary the Rotound,  
 Agrippa Marcus than gert fownd,  
 And than that tempyll, as men sayis,  
 All thus was fowndyt in thai dayis.

Quhen the senatowrys herd tell

That the Perseys ras rebell,  
 Agayne [the] state off Rome, than hale  
 Thai ordanyt, apon set counsalle, 980  
 To send furtht Marcus Agrippa,  
 On the Perseys were to ma,  
 For he wes prowest off the towne,  
 Commendyt wellle off gret renowne ;  
 To this thai thoucht hym for to threte,  
 Bot, or thai hys will mycht gette,  
 To delyvere hys entent,  
 He askyt thre dayis awysment.

Swa in hys slepe, apon a nycht,  
 A yhong lady, fayre [and] brycht, 990  
 F. 82. b. Aperynt tyll hym quhare he lay  
 In tyll hys bed, lang forow day,  
 And callyt hyr nam Dame Cibeles,  
 That modyr off all goddys wes ;  
 Scho sayd, Gyff [he] thare, Agrippa,  
 Lelyly wald hecht to ma,  
 In honowre off hyr, as scho  
 Couthe and walde kene hym to do,  
 A tempyll fayre, the Perseys qwyt  
 He suld in batell discumfyte. 1000  
 To that sone he gaue assent,  
 And avowyd, wytht lele intent,  
 For to fulfyll, in tyll all thyng,  
 Off that fayre lady the yharnyng.  
 And one the morne, qwhen day wes lycht,  
 All, as he saw this on the nycht,  
 To the senage he tald hale ;  
 And syne gert ordane his batele  
 Wyth a gret navyn apon sé,  
 And knychtys wycht off gret bownté 1010

In legyownys fywe ; and wyth tha quyte  
 The Perseys hale he discumfyte,  
 And agayne that tribwte wan,  
 That thai payid till Octovyan.  
 Syne for that caus he mad onone  
 The tempyll that thai callyd Pantheon,  
 In honowre off Dame Cybeles,  
 That modyre off all thare goddys wes.

And in that tyme Domytyane  
 Throuche wnhape hys dede has tane, 1020  
 And thare him fell a foule endyng  
 For hys fals and ywyll lyvyng,  
 Wyth hys awyne men slayne he was,  
 Off suddane chawns in his palas.  
 And Nerva, quhen that he wes dede,  
 Ras Empryowre in tyll his stede.  
 Hys empyre stude bot a yhere,  
 And foure moneth to reknyn clere ;  
 He wндыde and dampnyd hale,  
 As [wes] gevyn hym be counsale, 1030  
 All the dedys evryilkane  
 Before done throucht Domytyane :  
 For thai ware fundyn all off ylle  
 Done by the lauche for-owtyn skylle.  
 Swa by that ordynans Saynt Jhone  
 The ewangelyst till Epheson  
 Passyt agayne, off presown fre  
 Lowsyd ; thare welle resawyde wes he.

## CHAP. VI.

*Off Anaclete, and als Trajane,  
And Ebariste, contemporane.*

A.D.  
102.

**A**NE hundyr yhere and twa gane,  
Fra God off Mary flesche had tane,  
Anaclete, off natyowne

1040

F. 83.

A Grek, borne off the regyowne  
Off Athenys, nyne yhere,  
Twa moneth, and ten dayis clere,  
Wes Pape off Rome, and held that sé,  
And off Saynt Petyr than made he  
A memore, and till othir ma  
Byschapys in hys tyme allswa  
Steddys fayr, off gret honowre,  
He ordanyd for thare sepulture.  
Tyll all Crystynmen he prechyd,  
And thraly wytht hys lettrys techyd,  
That befor all othir thai  
Suld prestys hald in honour ay;  
For he sayd, syne thai specyaly  
Oysyd till God to sacrify,  
Thai suld nevyr supprysid be,  
Bot relevyt in all degre,  
And honoryd wyth ilka man.  
This Anaclete gert ordan than  
That quhen thai yhed to sacrify,  
Or do thare serwyce devoutely  
To God, thai suld wyth thame tak  
Wytnes, that suld knowlage mak

1050

1060

That thai sacrificyid welle,  
 And dyd thare devore ilka dele.  
 He ordanyd clerkys, wytth honowre,  
 To schawe thare berde and were tonsoure.

And efftyre hym, quhen he wes dede,  
 Evaryst sat in hys stede 1070  
 Ten yhere and monethys sevyn,  
 And twa dayis to rekyn evyn.

**T**O thir twa Papys Schyr Trajane  
 Wes Empryoure contemporane,  
 And nyntene yhere off the empyre  
 Stude lord, empryoure, and syre :  
 All Asy, Babylon, and Pers,  
 And hale Ynde, as I herd rehers,  
 He throwche rade and wan off were,  
 And made thame till Rome tributere. 1080  
 He gert wythin the Rede Se  
 A gret navyne gaddryde be  
 Off Ynde the marchys till distroy,  
 And hale that land for till anoy.  
 Off the empyre the bowndys brade,  
 Swa, in hys tyme, he gert be made,  
 That all the Oryent mad homage  
 Till Rome, and payid thare trewage.  
 Men oysyd for his wyrschype ay  
 In till comowne prowerbe say, 1090  
 Quha happyare than Octovyane,  
 Or quha evyre bettyre than Trajane ?  
 He wes als sa liberale,  
 Sa luwand, and sa specyalle,  
 Till [all] abowt hym, fere and neyre,

- Quhethyr evyr hale or seyke thai were,  
 That in propyr persowne he  
 Walde pas, and thare necessyte  
 Walde he wysyte and amend,  
 F. 83. b. And thare-wpon his gud dispende. 1100  
     Be thra counsale and felown  
 He made gret persecutyown.  
 Off Crystyn-men, bot yhit he wes  
 Comendyt off gret rychtwysnes.  
 The story sayis, evyn in that tyde  
 That till hys werys for tyl ryde  
 Hys fute he hade in sterape set  
 On hors to lepe, but ony lete ;  
 Be the fute a wyff hym gat  
 And benely carpyt efftyre that, 1110  
 " Now," scho sayd, " Schyr empryrowre,  
 Thow lywys in ryches and honoure,  
 Weldand warldys welth at wyll,  
 And I, anoyit in angris yl,  
 My lyff ledys, but help off thé,  
 That dettyde is to succoure me.  
 The comfort off my care, my sone,  
 Agayne the lauche to dede is done :  
 For the beld off thine honowre.  
 Thow do me lauch, Schir empryoure, 1120  
 Off thaim that that innocent  
 Has done to dede but jugement."  
 To that he ansuerd and sayd, " Dame,  
 Alsone agayne as I cum hame,  
 For thi sone I sall ger do  
 That laucht wald war done thare-to."  
 " Schyr empryoure," than sayd the wyff,  
 " Off thi gayne-come wytth thi lyff

Art thow sekyre, or quhilk is he  
That thi bowrche wyll thare-off be." 1130

" Dame," than sayd the empyoure,  
" Sek than till my successoure

For thi sone, I trowe he wyll  
Off hys dett the laucht fullfill."

" Off thi successoure the deyd  
May nothire payre na mend thi meyd,"

The wyff sayd, " Schyre empyoure,  
Thow art off laucht to me dettoure,

And, gyff thi successoure wyll  
His awyn det, in his tyme, fulfill, 1140

On na wys can thowe sykyre be  
Quhy thow suld set hym than to me,

And his awyn det to qwytt

May noucht mend thi mede a myt."

Owt off his sterape he wyth that

Drw his fute, and down he sat,

And dyd full lauche and jugement

Off thame that slwe that innocent.

Quhen that wytth the lauch his sone,

For a trespas that he had done, 1150

Suld have lesyd [his] eyn twa,

Ane he gert be tane off tha

F. 84.

Fyrst owt off hys awyn hevye

That ane mycht till hys sone be lewyde,

And ane left tyll hym-self alsua ;

Swa tynt and haldyn war eyne twa,

And the lawys ilk[a] delle

Kepyd ware and haldyn welle.

In tyll this tyme Schyr Placydas,

That callyd wes effytr Saynt Eustas, 1160

Off hys knyghtys evryilkane,

For worschype prynce wes, and chyftane.  
 The clerk Plynyus in his dais,  
 Wrote tyll hym, as the story sayis,  
 That Crystyn-men, one nakyn wys,  
 He suld dysses, or yhit supprys,  
 For in thame, sayd he, wes nane yll,  
 Bot, nevyr that he cowth fynd, thare wyll  
 Wes nevyr for to mak sacrificys,  
 Na do thare honowre, na thare serwys, 1170  
 Till mawmentys; bot thare oys wes ay  
 Lang to rys wp befor day,  
 And than thare Cryst devoutly  
 Honowre, and till hym sacrifice.  
 Fra thine he cessyd for to wede  
 Agayne the Crystyne-men in dede;  
 Bot, throuch his persecutyown,  
 Mony sufferyd the passyowne  
 And payne off ded, throuch martyry,  
 Off fell counsale and tyrandry, 1180  
 Before that Plynyus till hym wrate,  
 Commendand Crystynmenis state.

This emprioure Schyr Trajane  
 Tuk the trewage off Brettane.  
 And in hys tyme Duchill ras,  
 And atoure the Peychtis was  
 Wyth-in the kynryk off Scotland  
 Twenty yhere kyng regnand.

And quhen this Empryoure wes dede  
 Schyre Adriane ras in his stede, 1190  
 Bot Trajane sa douchty wes,  
 And be way off his rychtwysnes,  
 Saynt Gregore, with devotyown,  
 Made specyall and thra orysown



That God wald grawnt his saule to be  
 Owt off hel delyverit fre ;  
 And full wyttyng tharoff he gat  
 Off the angell eftyre that  
 That God had herd his orysown,  
 And at his petityowne  
 Trajanys saule wes owte off hell,  
 Quhare it condemnyd wes to duell.

1200

Bot fra thine Saynt Gregor ay  
 In till lestand langure lay,  
 And [in] paynys till his endyng,  
 For hys wantown thra askyng.  
 [For quhy, the Angell bad hym cheis  
 Owthire Trajanys saule to leys,  
 Or ellis to tak hym a seiknes,  
 Sen his askyn unskylfull wes ;  
 And the feveris tyll hym tuk he,  
 And sa he broucht the saule to gle ;  
 And this was eftyre fyve hundyre yeire  
 That Schir Trajane was broucht on beire.  
 And the cause of this peté was  
 For he hard of his rychtusnes,  
 And of hys lyf, and his gude deid,  
 And for he thret was, as we reid,  
 Be cruel consaill and fellone,  
 To mak sic persecutione .  
 Off Crystyn men, and noucht of will,  
 This gart Sanct Gregor tak hym tyll  
 That seiknes, and broucht hys saule to blys,  
 Quhare now baith he and he ay is.]

1210

1220

## CHAP. VII.

Off *Alpsatwondyr* and *Adrgane*  
*Sgxt*, *Thelefor*, and *mplde Antane*.

F. 84. b.  
 A.D.  
 122.

**A**NE hundyr and twa and twenty yhere  
 Efftyr the [byrthe] off oure Lorde dere  
 Alysandyr the Pape off Rome,  
 And kepare off all Crystyndome,  
 Fywe moneth and aucht yhere  
 And twa dayis full to rekyn clere, 1230  
 In tyll the Papys sege sat ;  
 Bot syne it wakyt efftyre that  
 Fully fywe [yere] and thretty dayis.

He ordanyd, as Frere Martyne sayis,  
 Watyr and salt tyll halowyt be ;  
 Haly watyr swa fyrst made he,  
 Wytth effectuus orysownys,  
 Agayne all yl temptatyownys.  
 Syne he bad that men suld fast  
 That watyr in thare howsys cast, 1240  
 And that Haly Wattyre ay  
 Suld be made on the Sownday.  
 In to the Mes he ordanyd syne  
 The watyre to be put in wyne ;  
 The bred als that the oyst suld be  
 Rownd, [and] off lytill qwantyté,  
 Bot off floure and watyre clere,  
 And, but ony othyr matere,  
 He ordanyd, and efftyr his day  
 The Kyrk has oysyd that manere ay. 1250

Syne in till the Canowne he  
 Made off the Mes, *Qui Pridic*,  
 That is oysyd to be sayd  
 Quhen yhe se the chesybyll layde,  
 And the preyste makys hym bown  
 To mak the levatyowne.

The empyoure Schyre Adriane  
 Gert Alysandyr this Pape be tane,  
 And presownyd hym in to gret pyne;  
 Throuch martyry he slwe hym syne.

1260

Thus quhen Alysandyr wes dede,  
 The Pape Syxt sat in his stede  
 Ten yhere and monethys thre,  
 And ane and twenty dayis fre.  
 Bot or that Alysandyr wes Pape,  
 Or off Rome wes maid byschape,  
 The empyoure Schyre Adriane  
 Off the empyre all state had tane,  
 And lyvyd, in wyschype and honowre,  
 Twenty and a yhere empyoure.

1270

Jerusalem, in his tyme, he  
 Gert agayne welle byggyt be,  
 Bot the Jowys he held ay  
 Wndyr yhok till his end-day.  
 He wes aʍenand and abyлле,  
 And in all dedys honorabyll,  
 And made lawys imperiale,  
 And wes rycht wis in governalle.  
 And a pillare he gert be made  
 In till Rome, that his name had.

1280

This Empryoure Schyre Adryane  
 Wes nere newew till Trajane,  
 Bot at hys state he hade inwry

That wes luwyde sa specyaly.  
 For that inwy gret landys sere,  
 That to the empyre wonnyn were,  
 Hale Babylon and Armeny,  
 And all the landys off Surry,  
 Throuch wyt and wertu off Trajane ;  
 This empyoure Schyre Adryane 1290  
 Lewyd, and swa set hym sone,  
 Off all Denmarke tyll have done ;  
 Na ware hys counsalle made hym lete  
 And hym on othyr purpos set.  
 All the tyme off hys empyre,  
 That he off Rome wes lord and syre,  
 He lywyt in qwyete and [in] pes,  
 And a welle lettryd man he wes,  
 Bathe off Latyne and off Grew,  
 He wes welle facund in Hebrewe, 1300  
 He mony rychtwys lawys made,  
 And in Athenys he ordanyd hade  
 Off fayre werk a gret Lybrare ;  
 And bade that nane sa hardy ware  
 Crystyn men, on ony wys,  
 For ony cryme for to supprys,  
 Bot gyff lele pruff agayne thame made,  
 And the lauch conwyct thame hade.  
 The Kyrk, in hys tyme, Oryentale  
 The oys off service changyt hale 1310  
 In to langage all off Grewe,  
 Owt off the langage off Hebrewe :  
 He ekyd gretly the tresoure,  
 And held his knychtys in honoure :  
 Off Jerusalem, quhen he  
 Had all up byggyt the cyté,

He gert wall in all that stede  
 Quhare Cryste the passyowne tholyd off dede;  
 And Crystyn-men ay lewyt he  
 Wyth-in the towne to mak entre; 1320  
 Bot he wald grawnt off nakyn wys  
 To the Jowys that franchyse.

Quhen that his barnage come hym till  
 And sayd hym, at it ware thaire wyll,  
 And full counsale, thai gave alle,  
 Cesare August his sone to calle;  
 He said, it suld suffice that he  
 Agayne hys wyll stud in that gre,  
 And, but dyssert, regnyt empyowre,  
 Thought that stat and that honowre 1330  
 War noucht spylt in swylk ane-othyr,  
 Quhethir ewyre he ware sone or brodyre,  
 Thare sulde na state succede be blude,  
 Bot thare ware undyre wertu gude;  
 A lorde borne wyth-owte meryte  
 Is noucht worth, he sayd, a myte;  
 A kyng off byrthe and wnworthy  
 Regnys, he sayd, unhappyly;

F. 58. b. The fadyr, he sayd, he couth welle prove  
 Dysspoylehyt the sone off fadyr love 1340  
 Mare chargis on hys bak to lay,  
 Than he mycht lychtly bere away;  
 For swa he settys hys besynes  
 Till smore hys sone be lyklynes,  
 And wyndyr byrthe hym to supprys  
 But helpe off hym wytht it to rys;  
 For-thi, suld men in thare yhowthede  
 Be techyd well, swa prove in dede,  
 And the effect oys off thare lare

Quharin before thai oysyd ware, 1350  
 Gyff that thai grewe swa off walu  
 Throuch wyt, wyrschype, and wertu,  
 That thai ware lyk thame till excede  
 That thai in honoure walde procede,  
 Than thai suld clyme as thai ware calde,  
 And stedfastly thare steppys hald  
 In to that hycht quhill thai ware set  
 That thai thame pressyt before to get,  
 Than regne and reule thaire reawté,  
 Wytth luffe, and lauche, and leawté. 1360

Quhen Schyre Adriane regnyde thus,  
 The phylosophyre Secundus  
 Wes in hys flourys and his state,  
 Bot hys sentens all he wrate,  
 For strayte sylence he held ay,  
 The cas thare-off I wyll noucht say,  
 For yhe may find it in his buke,  
 Gywe yhe wyll all hys tretys luke.

F. 86. b. In tyll-hys tyme, as I herd tell,  
 Oure the Peychtis Wordegell 1370  
 Rase, and kyng was in Scotland  
 Twenty wyntyr hale regnand.

I N till this Adryanys dayis,  
 Syxt, as the Cornykyll sayis,  
 Wes Pape off Rome, and ordanyt ay  
*Sanctus* [thryse] at the Mess to say,  
 Neyst efftyre the pefatyown,  
 Befor the levatyown.  
 He ordanyt als the Corporalle  
 Off clene lynt to be made hale, 1380

Fayre and quhyt, but only lyt ;  
 And als that nane suld handyll it,  
 Na nakyn thyng that halowyit ware,  
 Chalyce, towale, or awtare,  
 Bot thai that mynystryd in thare gré,  
 And ordanyt ware, and had powsté.

F. 86.      **A**ND eftyre hym quhen he was dede  
 Thelefore sat in his stede  
 Thre monethis, and ellewyn yhere,  
 And twa and twenty dayis clere.      1390  
 He ordanyt men for to fast ay  
 Sevyn owkys hale befor Pays day,  
 And *Gloria in Excelsis* he  
 Ordanyt at the Mes to be  
 Sayd, and on the Yhule day  
 He bad thre Messys be sayd ay :  
 At the cokcrawe the fyrst Mes,  
 For Cryst that in that tyme borne wes ;  
 The tothire syne ordanyt he  
 In the dawyng to swngyn be,      1400  
 For that tyme Cryst in clathis clene  
 Wes swelyt, and wytth the hyrdys sene,  
 And anowrnyt devoutly,  
 As Luk berys wytnes werraly ;  
 Syne the thryd Mes off that day  
 Eftyre Ters he ordanyt ay  
 To be sayd, quhen that the lycht  
 Offe oure redemptyowne [schynyt] brycht.

**A**ND eftyre that Schyre Adriane

Fayr deyt in tyll Champane, 1410  
Antone the mylde off the empire  
Stud Empryoure, bathe lord and sire,  
Thretty yhere and monethis thre,  
In to Rome that state held he.  
Mawche he was tyll Adriane,  
And till all Crystyn men, ilkane,  
He wes rycht meyke and off gude wyll ;  
For-thi, that name wes gevyn hym tille  
That myld Antone thai oysyd alle,  
And thare fadyre hym to calle. 1420  
And als in hys tyme landys sere,  
That oblyst tyll gret dettys were,  
Off thare dett he made thaim fre,  
Bot yhit thaire homage ay held he.  
The medycynare, Galyene off name,  
Wes in hys tyme off gret fame,  
And Tholomé, in astronomy,  
Wes than commendyt grettumly.  
And that tyme als Pompeyus,  
That callyd be name wes Trogus, 1430  
A Spaynaye kynd off natyowne,  
Commendyt wes off græte renowne,  
Off all the warlde the storys  
Fra Nynus kyng begouth to rys  
Till that tyme that Octovyane  
The world all to the Empyre wan,  
This Pompeyus in Latyne  
Cornykylde and dyvysyt syne  
Tha in fourty bukys and foure,  
Thare-eft Justyne that red thaim oure 1440  
Abbregyde all tha gret storys  
In smallere and in les tretys.



F. 86. b.

This myld Antone oysyd to say  
 That fere leware he had alway  
 A man off his to sauuff wnselayne  
 Than off hys fays to ala agayne,  
 For [that] a man a thowsand hale,  
 How evyre the werd yhed off batalle.

Antone the Myld this Empryoure  
 Alway to gud men dyd honoure, 1450  
 He hade a dochtyr callyd Fawstyne,  
 Off face fayre, and off fassown fyne,  
 In tyll hyr solace, as scho past,  
 Scho saw quhare men ware fechtande fast,  
 On ane off thai scho set hyr luwe,  
 For manhed that scho saw hym pruwe,  
 And brynt in lust sa stratly,  
 That bathe scho sek was and sary,  
 And all lyk for to be dede,  
 Bot gyff scho sonnare gat remede. 1460  
 Hyr husband, thare-fore, off Caldé  
 Gert medicynarys sone fetchyde be,  
 To se and ken quhat malady  
 Trauvalyd hys wyff sa grettumly.  
 Quhen thai come and had sene hyr welle,  
 And scho had tauld thame ilk[a] delle  
 The matere off hyr malady,  
 Thai [gaf] for counsale halyly  
 The man that swa hys manhed pruwýde,  
 And at scho sa stratly luwýde, 1470  
 To be slayne, and syne his blude  
 In tyll a weschall tycht and gude.  
 Sulde be put ; syne hastyly  
 Thai suld wesche oure hyr body  
 Wyth that blud quhill it war hate.

All thus thai dyd wyth-owt debate,  
And [qwhen] this counsall wes all done  
Hyr temptatyown cessyt sone,  
And coveryt welle off hyr malady,  
And lefft hyr folys fantasy.

1480

All this tyme in tyll Scotland  
The Peychtis duelt, and ware regnand,  
And Dekothet than off thame kyng  
Had fourty yhere thaire governyng.

In till this tyme Thelesforus  
The Pape deyt, and Ignius  
Foure yhere and monethis thre,  
Quhen he wes dede, that state held he.  
He made and ordanyt the clergy  
Dystynct be greis propyryl.

1490

The god-fadyre he bad alsua,  
Or the god-mudyre, the barnys ta  
Off the fownt quhen howyn thai ware.  
He ordanyt alsua that manare  
Quhen barnys suld confermyt be.  
Syne in a generalle lettyre he  
Off God and Mannys unyown,

F. 87.

And Crystys Incarnatyown,  
He wrate to be haldyn ay,  
But ony dowte, off Crystyn fay.

1500

**T**YLL the Pape Ignyus  
Neyst succedyt Schyre Pius,  
Ellewyn yhere and monethis foure,  
And ane and twenty days oure,  
Pape off Rome he werray was,  
In hys lettrys he said Hermes,

A doctor gret off Crystyne fay,  
 That welle wes lettryd in hys day,  
 Sayd, that ane angell, brycht and quhyte,  
 In tyll ane hyrdys pure habyt, 1510  
 Apperyt, and gaʷe bydding ay.  
 Pasce to mak apon Sownday;  
 For-thi, off oure autoryté,  
 We appruʷe that solempnyte  
 Ilka yhere to be done ay,  
 As cours rynns on the Sownday.

**M**ARCUS than Antonius,  
 And hys brodyr Aurelius,  
 Off the empyre nyntene yeire  
 Empryowrys and lordys were; 1520  
 And off Rome the empyre swa  
 Than wes dyvysyt betwene thame twa,  
 Bot quhen Aurelius the dede had tane,  
 Mark Antonius hym allane  
 Held and governyd the empyre.  
 All Asy throuch fra Tars to Tyre,  
 Ynde, and all the Oryent,  
 And gret part off the Occident,  
 He gert pay contributyowne.  
 Bot mony tholyde the passyown 1530  
 Off martyry for Crystyne fay  
 Wndyr hym; yhit wes he ay  
 Off gret wyt and off stabylnes,  
 For nane mycht ken that evyr he wes,  
 For ony word, off cas hapnand,  
 Changyt in hys assembeland.  
 Wyth mesure and benygnyté

All his landys trectyde he,  
 And all tyme [he] commendyt wes  
 Off worschype, honoure, and larges. 1540  
 Hys tresoure quhen he dispendyt hade,  
 Hys weschale, that off fyne gold wes made,  
 And all hys wywys hed-gere hale,  
 Wyth mony othire fayre jowale,  
 He gave his knychtis in thare fé,  
 For he defawte had off mone;  
 Na he his comownys on na wys  
 Wyth impositiownys wald supprys  
 But mare hys wyll stude to relewe  
 Than wndyr hym ony man till aggrewe. 1550

F. 87. b. And mony landys that than ware  
 Subject to Rome and tributare,  
 He releschyde thare trewage,  
 Reserwand tyll hym thare homage.

Combust, as oure story sayis,  
 Oure the Peychtis in hys dayis 1560  
 Wes twenty wyntyr kyng regnand  
 Wyth-in the kynryk off Scotland.

In hys tyme Pius the Pape wes dede,  
 And Anyclet rase in hys sted,  
 Nyne yhere and monethys thre  
 And foure dayis full he held that se.

Sothere syne hys successoure  
 Nyne yhere and thre moneth oure  
 And ane and twenty dayis fre  
 Sat in to the Papys se. 1570

He bade the nunnys on na wys  
 Suld cens the kyrk in thare serwys,  
 Nowthir chalice na corporalle,  
 Awtare halowyt, na towale,  
 Thai suld handyll be na way,  
 And he gave byddyng to thaim ay,  
 That thare wale ware na tyme lewyde,  
 Than than suld were it on thare hewyde.

## CHAP. VIII.

**Quha Pape and Empricoure was than,  
 Quhen fyrst conbertit was Brittan.**

A.D.  
185.

**A**NE hundyr and fourscore off yhere  
 And fyve full, or thare by nere 1580  
 Quhen that Sothere the Pape wes dede,  
 Elewtherius tuk hys stede,  
 And sat in till it fyftene yhere  
 Sex moneth and fywe dayis clere.

The Kyng off Brettane Lucyus  
 Wrat to this Elewtherius,  
 And made hym instans specyally  
 In till Brettane to send in hy  
 Off hys clerkis, for to preche  
 The Crystyne trewth, and syne to teche 1590  
 The Brettownys baptysme for to ta;  
 And he to be the fyrst off tha  
 He made full professiowne,  
 And hecht wyth gud devotyown.

This Pape than Elewtherius  
 At the instans off Schyr Lucyus

Send twa religious men,  
 Fugane callyt and Damyen,  
 In tyll Brettane for to preche  
 The Crystyne trewth, and men to teche 1600  
 Baptysme to tak; for na man may  
 But it be sauff on ony way.

Than at the fyrst off that cas  
 The Kyng off Brettane howyn was;  
 And all the barnage off his land  
 Than baptyst wes, and welle trowand,  
 And stedfast stud in to that fay  
 Till Dioclityanys day :

F. 88. That is, gyff the soume be sene,  
 Ane hundyr wyntyr and sextene, 1610  
 Or nere thare-by, as sum men wrate,  
 And variis as thai set thare date.

Aucht and twenty byschappys than  
 Wes off ydolys in Brettane,  
 And thre archebyschoppys als  
 Ware that tyme thare off ydolys fals;  
 The byschappys thai callyt thane Flamynes,  
 The archebyschopys callyt than wes  
 Archeflamynes: syne thare-efft 1620  
 In to stede off thame wes lefft  
 Byschopys, quhare was Flamynes,  
 And archebyschapys quhare grettyr wes.  
 Off that Papys autoryté  
 He gert Schyre Lucius howyn be.  
 This Pape als Elewtherius.  
 That Brettane to the trewth wan this  
 Ordanyd that na man suld be  
 But chalange put owte off his gre,  
 For Cryst, he sayd, wyst welle [that] Judas

Bathe a theffe and a traytoure was, 1630  
 Bot for he wes noucht off swylk thyng  
 Wytth the lauch accusyd off tholyng,  
 He wes noucht put off his offyce,  
 Bot bade and dyde furth his service.  
 Amange the Appostylls, and quhat that he  
 Dyde wyth thame for thare dignyte  
 Ferme and stabyll it wes left  
 And approwyd welle thare-efft.

**I**N till Rome Schyre Comodus,  
 The sone off Mark Antonyus, 1640  
 That tyme wes made empyoure,  
 And threttene yhere in that honoure  
 He stude, and wes in dedys fell,  
 Owtrageows, and rycht cruelle ;  
 Off Duche-land yhit halyly  
 He wan and had the wycory,  
 And held it subject all his days.

In Egypt syne, the story sayis,  
 He send off Rome a douchty man,  
 That callyt be name wes Phylpe than, 1650  
 Chefftane wndyr hym to be,  
 Off Alysandyr, the gret cyté.  
 This Philipe had a douchtyr fayre,  
 That suld off lauch have bene hys ayre,  
 Bot, for [luf] off [the] Crystyne fay,  
 Scho fra hyr fadyr stall away  
 In mannys wede, all prewaly,  
 And tuk wyth hyr in cumpany  
 Twa geldyt men and off gud fame,  
 That Prot and Jacmit had to name. 1660

F. 88. b.

Scho baptisme tuk in prewâté,  
 And held hyr madynhed ay secré  
 And Ewgenyus callyt be name,  
 Comendyt off rycht honeste fame,  
 And lete ay that scho wes a man.  
 Scho, and hyr twa geldyngys than,  
 That conversyt togyddyr ay,  
 Had acces gret tyll ane Abbay,  
 And thaire, off thare devotyowne,  
 Tuk habyte off relygiowne, 1670  
 And lyvyt thare religyowsly,  
 And dyde thare office perfytey.

Sa sone the abbot of the plas  
 Deyt, and entèryd was,  
 And this Ewgenyus, in his stede,  
 Wes chosyn quhen that he wes dede.

A woman than off pollute fame,  
 That callyt Melancia wes be name,  
 Wes nere duelland that abbay,  
 And [gret] repayre had tyll it ay; 1680  
 Off that repayre swa that scho hade,  
 And sawe this Abbot [was] new maid,  
 For luve scho yharnyt inkrely  
 Till have hade off hym copy.

Quhen scho mycht noucht get assent  
 Off that Abbot till hyr intent,  
 Scho defamyt that abbot hale,  
 And till the mwnkys tald a tale,  
 That he wald have lyn hyr by  
 And [had] supprysid hyr vyleusly, 1690  
 Na ware the pyth scho put agayne.  
 And helpyt hyr wyth mycht and mayne.  
 Quhen this qwene had carpyt thus,



This abbot syne Ewgenyus,  
 That hard this accusatyowne,  
 Before the prowest off the towne  
 Wes tyt and tane be howe and hare,  
 Quhill all hyr clathys ryvyn ware;  
 Swa in that toyle quhill scho wes tyt,  
 It wes persayvyt, through a slyt, 1700  
 That scho wes woman propyrly.  
 Than the prowest werraly  
 That beheld and saw this cas,  
 And kend at scho his douchtyre was,  
 Lowyt God, syne howyn wes he,  
 Wyth all hys court and his menyhe,  
 And the wykkyt quene Melans,  
 Throuch subitane and fell wengeans,  
 Off fyrflaucht fers in to that stede  
 Peryst, but ony kyn remede. 1710

**Q**WHEN Elewtherius the pape wes dede,  
 Victor sat in tyll hys stede  
 Twa moneth and ten yhere,  
 And twelff dayis passyd clere.  
 A gret Consalle he gert be  
 Haldyn wyth solempnyte;  
 Thare stablyst wes that Pasce suld ay  
 Be done apone [the] Sownday;  
 For mony byschapys off Asy,  
 And all the Oryent halyly, 1720  
 F. 89. Oysyd ilke yhere to do thare Pasce,  
 As than the Jowys maner was.  
 Gyff ony man in dowte ware stade,  
 And nede off helpe or mystyr had,

And yharnt in that poynt to be  
Crystyne man ; than ordanyde he  
That man to be howyn thare,  
In quhat kyn [ply] that ewyre he ware.

Quhen that Victor pape was thus,  
The empyoure ras, Elyus, 1730  
Till ilke man in his degré  
Myld and cumpynabill wes he.  
Bot wyth-in the fyrst yhere  
Off hys empyre, for-owtyn were,  
He wes slayne off cas, and dede.

Than ras Severus in hys stede,  
And sevyn yhere off the empyre  
He empyoure, bath lord and syre,  
Stude, and prowynt gret douchtynes,  
And a welle lettryd man he wes : 1740  
He wes cruelle, and fellowne,  
And made gret persecutyowne  
Off Crystyn men, that mony were  
Dede throuch hym in paynys sere.

He faucht wyth syndry natyownys,  
And wan, and made thare regyownys  
Till Rome subject ; and Brettane  
Off thai the last wes that he wan.  
And thare he mad wyth-in that Ile  
A wall lang off a hundyr myle 1750  
Wytht thretty myle thare-till and thre,  
Strekand ewyn fra se to se,  
In the takyn that he wan  
Off were the kynrike off Brettane.

In till Yhork syne he wes dede.  
Caracalla in tyll hys stede  
Sewyn yhere wes empyoure;

Bot lust supprisyt hys honoure :  
 Severyus sone he wes but dowte,  
 Bot he wes were than he all owte. 1760  
 In all poynt off lychery  
 He lywyt at lykyn fullyly.  
 Hys awyn step-modyr tyll wyffe  
 He tuk, and led wyth hyr hys lyffe.

**S**YNE Zepheryne the Pape off Rome,  
 And kepare off all Crystyndome,  
 Neyst succedyt till Wyctor,  
 Qwham off yhe herd me rede before,  
 And that sege held monethys sewyn,  
 Wyth twa dayis full and yheris ellewyn. 1770  
 He ordanyd than that ilke yhere  
 Thai that off eyld passyd were  
 Twelff yhere suld [be] clenly  
 Schrewyn, and tak syne devoutly  
 The Ewcaryst on the Pasche day,  
 That Goddys body is werray.

F. 89. b.      Qwhen this Zepheryne wes dede,  
 Calixt the Pape sat in his stede  
 Fyve yhere, and monethis twa,  
 And ten dayis wyth-outyn ma. 1780  
 The Pape Calixt in thai dayis  
 Ordanyt, as the story sayis,  
 The Catyrtens in dere fastyng.

Syne quhen his lyffe had tane endyng,  
 His successoure wes callyt Urbane,  
 That was off natyoune a Romane.  
 Thretten wyntere, and ellewyne  
 Monethys, and twelff dayis ewyn,

In Rome he held the Papys sé ;  
 Waleriane convertyde he, 1790  
 That spowsyd wes wytth Saynet Cecyle ;  
 And wndyr hym, in to that quhille,  
 The kyrk ras till possessiownys  
 Off rentys, and gret regyownys,  
 That befor hys tyme alway  
 Lywyd off tendys or monay  
 That wes gywyn in offerande,  
 Be oys or statute off the lande.

Till the Pape Calixt and Wrbane  
 Thre Empryowrys contemporane, 1800  
 Ware in thare tyme successywe,  
 And ilkane fellowne in thare lywe.  
 Off thai the fyrst wes callyt Martyne,  
 He lywyd bot a yhere ; neyst hyme syne  
 Antonyws wes empryoure,  
 And thre yhere stud in that honoure ;  
 Hys body brynt swa in delyte,  
 And off foule lust in appetyte,  
 That alkyn kynd off lychory  
 He oysyd als commownaly, 1810  
 As he a best, but wyt, had bene.

Neyst efftyre hym, wyth-outyn wene,  
 Alysandyr his successoure  
 Was threttene wynter empryoure :  
 And that tyme Orygenes  
 The Doctor in hys flowris wes :  
 And Caramacert in Scotland  
 Twenty wyntyr Kyng regnand  
 Wes oure the Peychtis in thai dayis,  
 As owre Scottis storys sayis. 1820

THIS tyme alway till Urbane  
 The Pape succedyt Pontayne,  
 That twa moneth, and fywe yhere,  
 And twa [dayis] full for-owtyn were  
 In Rome held the Papys se.  
 In Sardyny syne dede wes he,  
 And Cyryak, hys successoure,  
 Held bot a yhere that honowre.  
 Bot cesyd off devotyown,  
 Ancheses than, off natyown

1830

F. 90.

A Grek, he ordanyd in his se :  
 In cumpany syne past he  
 Wytht the ellewyn thousand madynmys clene  
 That before than howyn had bene,  
 Tyll Coloyne fra the court off Rome,  
 And wyth thame tholyd martyrdome.  
 Bot, for caus that his clergy,  
 Wend for lust off his body,  
 He had wyth thai madynmys gane,  
 Reknyt he wes noucht as ane  
 Off the Papys, quhare thai ar set.  
 Ancheses efftyre him, but lete,  
 Ordanyd byschapys for to be  
 Transferyd, for caus, fra se to se.

1840

To thire Papys, contemporane  
 Thre yhere fyrst Maximiane  
 Stud Empryoure ; quhen he wes dede,  
 Gordyane ras in tyll his stede  
 And sex yhere in the empyre  
 Stud off Rome bathe lord and syre.  
 Quhen Fabyane wes Pape off Rome,  
 And kepare of all Crystyndome,

1850

Neyst till Ancheses successoure,  
 And thretten yher in that honoure  
 He sat, and ordanyt the Creme ay  
 To be made on the Skyre Thurisday.  
 Quhen the congregatyowne  
 Sat in thaire electyowne,  
 And Fabyane amang thame thare,  
 A quhyte dow on hys hewyde bare  
 Lychtyde, and said he sulde be Pape  
 And off the warld the mast byschape;  
 Throuch that electiowne in that plas,  
 Pape off Rome he chosyn was.

1860

## CHAP. IX.

In this next plas phe sal se  
 Qwhat Empryours fyrst [tuk] Crystynanté.

A.D.  
 246.

**T**WA hundyre wyntyre and fourty  
 And sex oure-passyd fullyly,  
 Efftyre the Incarnatyown  
 That mad oure salvatyowne,  
 The Empryoure Gordiane dede,  
 Philipe ras in till his stede  
 Off Rome lord and empryoure.  
 And quhille he was in that honoure  
 He made hys sone partynere  
 Off the empyre, and sevyn yhere  
 Tha twa governyd halyly  
 Off the empyre the senyhowry,  
 And bath Phylipe thai ware cald;  
 Bot, as I fynd, Phylipe the alde

1870

Wes the empyoure that tuke  
 Fyrst Crystyndome, as sayis oure buke ; 1880  
 And how that fyrst fell yhe sall here,  
 As I fynd wryttyn, the manere.

In Rome quhilum a senatoure,  
 Marcus callyt, in till honoure  
 F. 90. b. Lywyd, and weddyt a lady,  
 That be name wes callyd July ;  
 Togyddyr lang thai led thare lyff  
 In rest and ese wytth-owtyn stryff  
 And luwyde rychtwysnes alway,  
 Bathe trewe and stedfast in thare fay. 1890  
 Sa betwen thame twa, off cas,  
 Grete wame wytth barne his lady was,  
 And, as hyr tyme wes cummand nere,  
 Scho oysyd fastyng and prayere ;  
 As wemen in sic perylle stode  
 Offtsys for thare lyff sa rade,  
 Hechtys and awwows mare,  
 Than efft to qwytt off wyll thai are.

This lady wowyt gret pilgrimage,  
 And tuk furth thare-on hyr wayage, 1900  
 And wysytyd hyr goddys, ane and ane,  
 And soucht the tempyllys evryilkane.  
 Sa in the tempyll off Jupytera,  
 As scho was makand hyr prayere,  
 The preyst revestyd on hys wys,  
 For to resaue hyr sacrificys,  
 Fra that he sene had this lady,  
 [He] chawngyd hewys rycht suddanly,  
 And worthyd owt off his wyt sa wode,  
 That thai ferlyd that by him stode ; 1910  
 He tuggyd wyth hys teth in taggys,

Hys westyment rywand all in raggys.  
 Wyth that thai that stud hym by  
 Tuk and held hym stalwartly,  
 And syne hys bak layd at the erd.  
 Bot ay wytth rarys reche he berde,  
 Wedand, but wyt, as a wod-man,  
 And his comowne word was than,  
 Amang thame [al] in to that stryffe,  
 "Owte! owt! oute apon yhone wyff!" 1920  
 Hyr byrth sall brew ws mekyll bale  
 That howre fell in the dysemale  
 Quhen scho consaywyd," he sayd, "off man  
 That wes betwene hyr sydys than :  
 For, as I wate welle, I yhoue warne,  
 In till hyr wame now is a barne,  
 That sal gere our goddis alle  
 Be brokyn in to pecis smalle,  
 And owre templys cast[yn] downe,  
 And wndowne oure relygyowne ; 1930  
 Off oure goddis mekyll off mycht  
 In me," he sayd, " the spyryte rycht  
 Gerrys me spek this in prophecy,  
 That yhe sall fynd full certanly."  
 This was noucht that spyryt brycht,  
 In twngys off fyre wyth lemeand lycht,  
 But brynnyng, that on Wytseownday  
 Illumynynd the Appostillys, swa that thai  
 Oppynly spak in all langage,  
 Quhare throuch all natyownys had knowlage 1940  
 Off haly wryt, quhen that thai  
 Prechyd haly kyrkys fay.  
 This spyryte that spak in to the brest,  
 As yhe haue herd, off this wode preste,

F. 91.



Wes off the de[w]ille that, but drede,  
 Throuch mycht off God behoȳd on nede,  
 But certane wyt, that thyng to tell,  
 As in to deyd thar efttyre fell.  
 God has till hym reservyd all  
 The wyt off that that is to fall; 1950  
 Sa it is Goddys propyrté,  
 To ken the thyngys or thai be.  
 Off all hys creaturys thare is nane  
 That tell can thare-off the certane;  
 Bot [qwhen] the ill spyryte is swa  
 Traȳalyd that he man ansuere ma,  
 Hys ansuere alwayis is dowsows,  
 And the conclusyowne perylows.  
 The prest thus beryd lang and fast,  
 Swa the lady, at the last, 1960  
 That beheld and saw this cas,  
 Affrayid owte off mesure was.  
 Wpe sho ras, and full gud spede  
 Owte off the tempyll gretand yhede,  
 And entryd in a hows nere by  
 The tempyll, dulefull and sary;  
 Thare quhyllle scho swonyd, and quhill scho swete,  
 Quhill wepyt, quhill scho wongys wete,  
 Quhill wyth hard and heȳy stany  
 Bryzyd bathe brest and bak at anys; 1970  
 And ay scho sayd, Allace! alas!  
 That evyr scho borne, or gottyn was,  
 That byrth to bere, that suld gere all  
 Thaire templys on thare goddys fall;  
 And lete gyff scho had hade a knyff  
 For tyll haȳe slayne hyr barne, hyr lyff  
 Scho wald have put in aȳenture,

Had noucht bene the senature,  
 Marcus, hyr lord, that saw hyr swa,  
 Bathe heȝy in till hys hart and wa, 1980  
 Quhile he hyr chastyd wyth manas,  
 And quhill hyr comfortyd wyth solas.  
 For all the murnyng that scho made,  
 Hyr kyndly tyme off nede scho bade,  
 And than was lychtare off a sone,  
 The quhilk to dede scho wald have done,  
 Had noucht the fadyre nere bene by  
 That snybbyt hyr rycht greȝowsly,  
 And bad hyr off hyr birth forbere  
 To byd, gyff thaire god Jupytare 1990  
 Wald reweng hym at hys wylle,  
 Syne large off mycht he wes thare-tille.  
 The barne, he sayd, thai suld noucht sla  
 Gyff he wald wengeans off hym ta.

The chyld than gert thai tendyrly  
 Be nursyt, quhill thare wes gane by  
 F. 91. b. Oure hys eyld full seȝyn yhere ;  
 Fra thine on buk thai gert hym lere  
 Hys primytyvys, quhill he couth welle,  
 And all hys grammarre ilka delle ; 2000  
 Bot hys fadyr gert hym ay  
 Draw fra Crystyn men away,  
 In[til] intent that destyné  
 Off thare goddys suld brokyn be.

Apon a day, yhit nevertheles,  
 As to the scule he gangand wes,  
 By a chapell he come nere,  
 Qwhare Crystyn men than syngand were,  
 And the Psalme, as I hard telle,  
 Wes *In Exitu Israëlle* ; 2010

And, [as] Vincent mad rehers,  
 Thai ware syngand than this wers,

*Deus autem noster in celo: omnia quecunque  
 voluit fecit: Simulacra gentium argentum et  
 aurum, opera manuum hominum.*

This is, in oure twng, to say,  
 "God, forsuth, in hevyn is ay,  
 And all thyng that he wald has wroucht;  
 Thir mawmentys off the folk ar noucht  
 Bot gold and sylvyr made throuch man."  
 Off this grete thought the barne had than,  
 And quhen he herd thaim [syng] thir wers,  
 Ay off thame he made rehers.

2020

In to the chapell syne in hy  
 He yheid, and drewe in cumpany  
 Till Crystyn men that thai wers sang,  
 And sa conversyt thame amang,  
 That off the Pape Pontyane  
 Haly baptysme he had tane,  
 And callyd be name wes Pontius.

Swa quhen he wes hovyn thus,  
 And hys devor all wes done,  
 At certane tyme he sped hym sone,  
 [And] off hys chang glayd and fayne,  
 Till his fadyr hame agayne;  
 And sone efftyre that thai met samyn,  
 And melyd togyddyr off thare gammyn,  
 The fadyr speryt at the sone  
 In to the scule howe he had done,  
 Syne the tyme before than last,  
 That he had fra his fadyr past,  
 And made [hym] examynatiowne  
 Off his lare and his lessowne.

2030

2040

The chyld than ansuered hys fadyr dere,  
 " Syn that tyme that I last wes here,  
 A bettyre lessown newyre wes red  
 Than I herd in a priwa sted."

The fadyre speryt than how it was,  
 And the chyld tauld all the cas;  
 Syne throucht hys wys argument,  
 Hys fadrys hart and hys intent  
 Wes hale inclynyd baptysme to ta.

Than togyddyre bathe thai twa

2050

F. 92.

Passyd in hy till Pontyane,  
 That werray Pape off Rome wes than;  
 There wes he baptyst, and, that done  
 In hy, wytht Pontyus his sone,  
 This Marchus in thare tempyll past,  
 And brak downe off thare mawmentys-fast,  
 And kennyd Cryst for thare Creatoure,  
 And dyd hym serwyce and honowre.

Sa fell, efftyr mony day,  
 Quhen this Marcus wes dede away,  
 This chyld wes takyn apon threte,  
 For honoure off his lynage grete,  
 And present to the Empryoure,  
 That held hym in till gret honoure  
 Off gre, and state, and senyhowry,  
 As till hym fell off awncestry.

2060

Sa quhen the empryoure herd telle  
 That Frans agayne Rome wese rebelle,  
 Owt off hys cowrt he send a knyght,  
 That Decyus to name had rycht,  
 Wytht a gret ost, as man off were,  
 Frans to dawnte wyth that powere.  
 And quhen this Decyus past in Frans,

2070

For till amese thare this distans,  
 Rynnand wes the thousand yhere,  
 As reknyt wes and countyt clere,  
 Fra Romulus gert wallyt be  
 Off Rome, as yhe herd, the cyté ;  
 And, for that caus, the Romanys hale  
 All that yhere held festywallé,  
 In turnamentys and justyng,  
 Menstralcyis, and gret dansyng ;  
 And ilk[a] day apon thare wys,  
 Dyd till thare goddys thaire serwys,  
 And held thare solace and thare play.

2080

The Empryoure swa, on a day,  
 Ordanyd hym, on hys best wys,  
 To pas and mak hys sacrifice  
 Till his god Jovys, devoutly ;  
 Swa tuk [he] in hys cumpany  
 This chyld Pontyus, that was  
 Gruchand in that way to pas ;  
 Bot, in the way, swa quhen he  
 Saw his oportunyté,  
 He sayd, " Me thynk, Schyr Empryoure,  
 This serwyce till yhoure Creatoure,  
 Wyth gud wyll yhe sulde dispend  
 That has till yhowe that honowre send."  
 " Sone," he sayd, " tharefore I ga  
 Now to the tempill, for to ma  
 Till Jupityr my sacrifyis,  
 As is my det, on my best wys ;  
 For he is that God off mycht  
 That has me hevyd to this hycht."  
 The chyld sayd, " Schyre Empryoure,  
 Yhe ar imployd in gret erreoure,

2090

2100

Yhoure mychty Makar to forsake,  
 And tyll a dewyll yhoure serwys mak.  
 Yhon similakare callyt Jupityr  
 Can nowthire spek, luk, na here, 2110  
 Set he haue mouth and erys twa,  
 Handys, nes, and eyne alsua;  
 For it is bot a lumpe, but lyve  
 It has nane off the wyttys fyve,  
 Bot is bath dum, and deffe, and daft,  
 Off metall made wyth mannys crafft."  
 "Swylk, sone," sayd the Empryoure,  
 "Suld I than call my Creatoure?"  
 "Schyr," sayd the chylde, "He that yhow wroucht,  
 And all that is has made off noucht; 2120  
 That borne wes off the madyn chast,  
 Consayvyd throuch the Haly Gast,  
 And syne mad oure redemptyowne,  
 Throwch wertu off his passyowne."  
 Throuch thir wordys, and othir ma,  
 The Empryoure, and his sone alsua,  
 Past to the Pape, Saynt Fabyane,  
 And off hym baptysme sone has tane,  
 And Phylip cal[ly]d ware thai twa,  
 The fadyre, and the sone alsua, 2130  
 In hy togyddyre als[ua] fast  
 To the tempill sone thai past,  
 And thare thaire symilacrys all  
 Thai tuk, and brak in pesys smalle;  
 And swa the destyné wes welle  
 Fulfillyd and haldyn, ilké delle,  
 That the wod prest off fors said,  
 Quhen he wes brankand in hys brayd.  
 Swa stedfast syne in Crystyne fay

Thai ware, that on the Pasce day 2140  
 The fadyre, and the sone alsua,  
 To the kyrk past, for to ta  
 Thaire housyll amang Crystyn men,  
 And the Pape, than Fabyen,  
 That herd thare confessyowne,  
 Gert thame, wyth contrityowne,  
 Thare pennance do wyth-owt the qwere,  
 Quhare the comownys standand were,  
 Quhill bathe the Serwyce and the Mes  
 Wes done, as than the manere wes, 2150  
 And syne on kneys devoutly thai  
 Goddys body tuk werray.  
 Thus Philip, empyoure off Rome,  
 The fyrst wes that tuk Crystynedome.

Decyus this tyme in till Frans  
 Was, and amesyd gret distans,  
 And wan thaire subjectione,  
 And tuk thare contributyounes,  
 And ressayvyde thare homage,  
 And off the grettast tuk hostage, 2160  
 And gert thame sele thare ragman welle  
 Off all thare poyntys ilké delle.

F. 93. In all that deyde he was sa wys,  
 That worschype gret he wan, and prys,  
 And pompus hawtane in hys fere  
 He past all mesure and manere,  
 Swa [that], wyth gret bost and deraye,  
 Off Frans to Rome he tuk the way,  
 And Phylip, than the Empryoure,  
 For till have ekyd hys honowre, 2170  
 Hys state, hys wurschype, and his gré,  
 Arayid hym wyth great reawté,

And all hys barnage halyly,  
For till haȝe met hym realy.  
Quhen he herd that Decyus come,  
He tuk hys wayage owt off Rome,  
And on that purpos come onone  
Nere till a cyté cald Werron,  
And quhen he herd thare that hys knyght,  
This Decius had, for that a nyght 2180  
Wyth-in that cyté tan herbry,  
For dowl off ryot or rywery;  
And that thare metyng fyrst suld be  
Sene wytht all the comunaté,  
In tyll a-pert wyth swylk honowre,  
As ordanyt wes the Empryoure  
In till a lawnd wytht-owte the towne,  
Gert disscend hys pavylowne,  
And all the lordys that than thare  
Come, and off hys duellyng ware, 2190  
As thai off state ware and off gre,  
Nere hym he gert herbryde be,  
And gat hym wytalle off the land,  
The towne for to leve abowndand,  
That till hys knyght na thyng mycht fayhle,  
That for hym tane had that travayhle.

This Decyus that ilké nyght,  
Well anarmyt at all rycht,  
Prewaly out off the towne  
Past on to the pavylowne 2200  
Quhare that the Empryoure than lay,  
And slwe hym thare lang befor day;  
Syne to the pawylownys, ilkane,  
He past, and tuk wpe ane and ane  
Off the lordys thare, as thai



Slepanð in thare beddis lay,  
 And sum wytht trettys, and sum wyth awe,  
 He gert all till hys serwyce drawe.  
 To Rome he passyt syne in hy,  
 Wyth all thai in his cumpany.

2210

Quhen the Romanys than herd tell  
 How that that cas hapnyd sa felle,  
 [Thai] begouth, on thare best wys,  
 Agayne this Decyus for to rys.  
 That fellowne slawchtyr he aʒowyd,  
 And sayd, he suld be welle alowyde  
 And commendyt wyth thaim, na thai  
 Suld it murthyre call na way,

F. 93. b.

For tyll wndo thare goddys fa,  
 How lychtlyast thai mycht hym sla;  
 Syne he wes the fyrst off Rome  
 Empryoure that tuk Crystyndome,  
 Ensawmpyll and juge agayne thare fay,  
 But sulde the blythare be alway,  
 That he to dede ware put sa sone,  
 Or that thare trowth war all wndone.

2220

Be swylk slycht, and swylk qweyntys,  
 The Romanys forebare to rys  
 Agayne hym, as thai fyrst thought :

Hys purpos syne till end he broucht,  
 Swa that he wes Empryoure,  
 And twa yhere full in that honowre  
 He stud, cruell and fellowne,  
 And made gret persecutyowne  
 Agayne Crystyn men alway,  
 And at wndyr held thare fay,  
 And ay martyrys off thame he made,  
 Quhill that he lyff in lestyng hada.

2230

He slwe the Pape Fabyane,  
 And othir martyrys mony ane 2240  
 He made wndyr [that] culoure  
 That Phylipe he slwe, the Empryoure.

Quhen Philip yhong herd be tauld  
 That his fadyr, Philipe the awld,  
 Wes slayne and dede, away he stall  
 And hys tresoure levyt all  
 Till Saynt Sixt, that than byschape  
 Wes, and off Rome efftyre Pape.  
 This Phylip yhong ay was sa lowryde,  
 That men mycht newyre, for play na bowryd, 2250  
 In na sted, na in na quhyllie,  
 Ger hym blenk, na lauch, na smyle.  
 This Saynt Sixt, I spak off are,  
 Till auld Phylpe wes tresorare ;  
 Yhong Phylipe his sone, for-thi,  
 Quhen he away stall prewaly,  
 Lefft wyth that Sixt that tresore,  
 As I haue made rehers before,  
 And, in till Sixtys passyowne,  
 Saynt Laurens has mad mentyowne 2260  
 Off that tresore, as is kend  
 And wrytyn welle in his legend.

**Q**WHEN Fabyane the Pape wes dede,  
 Cornelius sat in till his stede  
 Thre yhere and monethys twa,  
 And full ellewyn dayis to tha,  
 Syne wes he slayne wyth Decyus.  
 Till hym succeedyd Lucyus,  
 That twa yhere, and monethis thre,

- And twa dayis, helde the Papys sé. 2270  
 Than Gallus and Velusiane  
 War Empryourys contemporane  
 F. 94. Twa yhere and monethis foure,  
 Quhen [Decyus] dayis war all done oure.  
 Quhen Lucyus his dede had tane,  
 Stewyn, off natyowne a Romane,  
 Pape off Rome wes yheris foure,  
 Twa moneth, and twa dayis oure.  
 Prestys and deknys he bad that thai  
 Suld noucht in comowne oys alway 2280  
 The halowyt vestyment on thame bere,  
 As claythys that thai oysyd to were,  
 But quhen thai ware in thaire office,  
 In kyrkys doand thare service :  
 Off almows mony dedys sere,  
 He dyd, that I will noucht tell here:  
 Throw martyry syne he wes  
 Done to dede, syngand his Mes.  
 Waleryane than and Galiene  
 In to the empyre stud fyftene 2290  
 Yherys, and dawntyd halyly  
 All Grece, Gotland, and Asy.  
 Wyth Sapor syne, the kyng off Pers,  
 Thai faucht, and, as I herd rehers,  
 Thai empryourys wyth thaire ost, qwyte  
 Ware in that batalle discumfyt,  
 And thare than wes Waleryane  
 Yholdyn and as presownere tane,  
 And set that he wes empryoure,  
 Ay schame he tuk and dyshonoure ; 2300  
 For alway quhen the kyng off Pers  
 Wes for till ryd, I herd rehers,

That empyowr behowyd off fors  
 To ly ewyn down besyd hys hors,  
 Lauch on erd, quhill that that kyng  
 Wald clyme on hym at hys lykyng,  
 And on hys crag, or on hys face,  
 As the wyll off that kyng was,  
 Ay hys a fute he walde set,  
 Quhill he mycht the tothire get  
 Essyly in hys sterype,  
 Apon his hors quhen he wald leipe.  
 Gernard-Bolg nyne yhere than  
 In till Scotland wes oure-man.

2310

Neyst hym syne Wypopenet  
 In Scotland held the kyngis set  
 Oure the Peychtis thretty yhere ;  
 Till all the tymys passyd were  
 Off thire Papys successywe,  
 That yhe herd me last dyscrywe,  
 And sex Empryourys than  
 To thai Papys contemporan.

2320

F. 94. b.

**E**FFTYRE the dede off Pape Stevyn,  
 Saynt Sixt that sé held thre yhere ewyn  
 Ellewyn moneth and sex dayis.  
 Befor that, as the story sayis,  
 He in Spayne as Legat past,  
 Thare Crystyne throwth he prechyd fast,  
 And twa fayre yhong men thare he fand,  
 Honest, habyll, and awenand,  
 The tane be name was callyd Lawrens,  
 And the tothire wes callyd Vyncens ;  
 Thir twa luwyt Sixt specyaly,

2330

And wyth hym wes contenualy  
 Quhill he wes in Spayne prechand.  
 Syne, quhen he turnyd off the land,  
 For luwe, tha twa folowyd fast,  
 And furth to Rome ewyn wyttht hym past,  
 And wyth hym in thare serwyce bade,  
 Pape off Rome quhile he wes made, 2340  
 And efttyre that tyme als[sa] fast  
 In Spayne Saynct Vincent agayne past.  
 Bot in till Rome Saynct Laurens bade,  
 And wyth that Pape hys duellyng made ;  
 And he than made hym hale kepare,  
 And, at hys lykyng, delyverare  
 Off all the gud and the tresoure  
 That Phylip the Empryoure before  
 Had delyveryd hym quhen he past  
 Owt off the land, and fled rycht fast 2350  
 Fra Decius, that wes [sa] fell  
 Till Crystyn men, as yhe herd tell.  
 Quhen this Sext wes [Pape] off Rome  
 And kepare off the Crystyndome,  
 [He] ordanyd prestys for to say  
 Thare Mes on halowyd awterys ay,  
 That ware perfytylly mad off stane,  
 Quhar befor hys tym wes nane  
 That swa oysyd to say the Mes.  
 Throuch martyry syne slayne he wes 2360  
 Wndyr Decius yhong, that syre  
 And lord than wes off the empyre.

Efttyre that Waleriane  
 And Galiane the dede had tane  
 This Decyus yhong wes rycht fellowne,  
 And made gret persecutiowne

Apon Crystyn men alway,  
 And mekyll at wndyr held thare fay,  
 And mony martyrys he gert may ;  
 This ilké Sixt wes ane off thai 2370  
 That wndyr hym deyde throuch martyry.

Saynct Laurens than, that nere wes by  
 And sawe this persecutyowne,  
 And Sixte lede till hys [passiowne],  
 Sayd than, " Fadyr, quhethir nowe  
 Wytth-owt mynystyr passys thowe,  
 F. 95. Quhethire art thou hast wyth sa gret hy,  
 But ony serwand swa anyrly,  
 Thow wes wownt on nakyn wys  
 To do but dekyn thi serwys ? 2380

Lewe me noucht, my fadyr dere,  
 Swa anyrly behynd thé here,  
 For the tresore now, but dowt,  
 All hale I have dyspendyt owte."

Quhen Cesare yhong, this Decius,  
 Herd hym spek off tresore thus,  
 He bad that he suld tyll hym bryng  
 That tresoure all, but delaying,  
 And Laurens than off dayis thre  
 Askyd delay, swa that he 2390

Mycht it all in a sowme get ;  
 That grawntyd wes till hym, but let,  
 For Decyus yhong, the empyoure,  
 Thoughttill have gottyn that tresoure ;  
 The delay thare-fore wes  
 Grawntyd wytth the mare blythnes.  
 And in this mene tyme Saynct Laurens  
 Gadryd, wytth rycht gret diligens,  
 Off pure folk a gret menyhé,

Off eyld, and off debilyté,  
 That in tyll gret ned war stad,  
 And mystyr off thare fyndyng had,  
 And closyd thame all prewaly  
 In tyll ane hous, and syne in hy  
 He yheyd to the empyoure,  
 And bad hym cum, and hys tresoure  
 Se and ressaŵe, gyff hym thoucht  
 That it war worth, or gaynande oucht.  
 Wyth that Decyus past in hy,  
 Wyth Saynet Laurens rycht blythly,  
 For till haŵe gottyn than, thought he,  
 Off gold and sylvyr gret plenté.  
 Saynet Laurens than wndyde the dure,  
 And sayd, "Lo here, Schyre Emptyowre,  
 Off the kyrk the gret tresore,  
 Quhare-off I mad the hecht before;  
 That mekyll may to thi saule aŵayle,  
 And neŵyre mare is lyk to fayle,  
 Gyff that thow may ware welle this  
 The growyng sall be heŵynnys blys."  
 Thare than quhen Schyre Decyus  
 Saw he wes beglyt thus,  
 In malancolyne, tene and ire,  
 Kyndyll he gert [be] a gret fyre,  
 And thare-on rostyde Saynet Laurens;  
 Throw swilk torment and pennens,  
 To Jhesu Cryst the saule he send  
 In joy to duell wyth-owtyn end.  
 This Decyus yhong, I spak off are,  
 Was noucht callyt August, bot Cesare,  
 And fra gud Octovyane  
 All the emptyowrys [evry]jilkane

2400

2410

2420

2430

F. 95. b.

To tytyll Cesare August hade  
 Befor this Decyus had mad  
 Off Pers hys awne intrusyowne,  
 For-thi, the les wes his renowne.  
 For nowthir be rycht off lynage,  
 Na be laucht off herytage,  
 Off Rome he wes Empryoure ;  
 Tharfor his state and his honoure  
 Wes the les, bath in his fame  
 [And] in the titill off hys nam.

2440

**D**YNYS till Syxt neyst successoure,  
 Twa wyntyrr sat in that honoure,  
 Aucht monethys and dayis thre :  
 Fyrst kyrk-yhardys ordanyd he,  
 And till the kyrkys parochys ;  
 And ilk prest, off his offys,  
 He ordanyd to kepe the parochy  
 Till hym assygnyd, distinctly,  
 And hald hym off his part content,  
 Usurpand noucht oure his extent.

2450

Felix neyst hym sat twa yhere,  
 And thre monethe passyd clere.  
 And eftyrr hym Euticiane,  
 That wes off natyowne [a] Tuskane,  
 Wes Pape ten moneth and aucht yhere,  
 And dyd gret almows dedys sere.

Claudyus and Auriliane  
 Wer empryour[is] contemporane,  
 Quhen Dynys and Felix successywe  
 War ilkane Papys in thaire lywe.  
 This Aurilyane in till Frans

2460



Gret werys amesyð, and distans,  
 And syne, apon the wattyr off Layre  
 He fowndyd a cyté, gret and fayre,  
 And the name off that cyté  
 Orlyens, efftyr hym, callyt he,  
 And sua is yhit callyt to this day.  
 Syne, quhen he wes dede alway, 2470  
 Tatikus wes Empryowre,  
 And Probus his neyst successure,  
 Floryane, and syne Clarus:  
 Thire empryowris sex successywe thus  
 Regnyd thre and thretty yhere.  
 And Fawchna-Qwhyth than ras off stere,  
 And twenty yher was regnand  
 Oure the Peychtis in Scotland.

F. 96.

GAYUS syne wes the Pape off Rome,  
 And kepare off all Crystyndome, 2480  
 He ordanyd hym that prest[ys] suld be  
 For till be ordanyd, gré be gré,  
 Crownebenet fyrst, accolyte neyst,  
 Subdekyn, dekyn, and syne preyst.  
 He ordanyd als that na pagane  
 Or herytik, a Crystyn man  
 Chalange suld on ony way,  
 Or ony sclandyr on hym say.  
 He bad als that nane suld drawe  
 Clerkys, for till suffyre lawe 2490  
 Befor [ony] Juges Seculare;  
 And, gyff ony dowsyns ware,  
 Or grypt questyownys off swylk were,  
 That ware deficyle to declere,

Thai suld at the Pap[ys] sé  
Referryd and decleryd be.

All this tyme Dyoclytyane  
And [his] falow Maximiane  
Off the empyre thretty yhere  
Wes ane wyth othir parsenere. 2500  
Il and fellowne all were thai  
And held at wndyr Crystyne fay.  
Thai gert bryn wp in tyll a fyre  
Off dry schydys, brynnand schyre,  
All the bukys off Crystyne lawe,  
That nane throwch thame the treuth suld knawe.  
This Dyoclytyane past off were  
Owt off Rome, wyth hys powere,  
In to the Oryent; thare landys sere  
To Rome he mad tributere, 2510  
And all that trowit in Crystyne fay  
To dede war done wyth-owt delay.

Maximiane his falow than  
In Ewrope mony landys wan.  
All Frans [at] that tyme wes cruell  
Stowt agayne Rome, and rebell;  
Wytth hys ost he throwch [it] rad,  
And to Rome it subject mad.  
Syne all Ducheland, and Spayne,  
Norway, Denmark, and Brettayne 2520  
This Maximiane wan off were,  
And dawntyd hale wyth his powere.

And Ingland than, as sayis the buk,  
Thare Crystyndome all hayle forsuk  
Throwch the persecutiowne,  
That wes austere and fellowne,  
Done through Dyoclytiane

F. 96. b.

And his falow Maximiane;  
 Swa that wythin thretty dayis,  
 As Vincent, and Frere Martyne sayis, 2530  
 Twa and twenty thowsand were  
 Martyrys mad in landys sere.  
 Saynt Jorge and Saynt Anastas,  
 Saint An, Lucy, and Agas,  
 And othir mony martyrys sere,  
 That may noucht all be reknyd here,  
 Off dede tholyt the passyowne,  
 Throuch thaire persecutyowne.

**T**HE Pape Gayus than martyrdome  
 Tuk, and neyst hym Pape off Rome 2540  
 Marcellyne sat sevyn yhere,  
 And twa moneth passyd clere,  
 Twenty dayis thare-till and fywe :  
 For dowte off tynsall off hys lyve,  
 He mad on the Paganys wys  
 Till ydolys fals hys sacryfyis.  
 Bot a Senyhe solempne syn he  
 Gert in Chawmpayne gadryde be,  
 Ane hundyr byschopys and four score,  
 Welle rewestyd hym before ; 2550  
 Wyth opyn and playne confessyowne,  
 And wyth werray contrityowne,  
 He jugyd hym-self for to be  
 Deprywȳd off his dignyté,  
 And curssyd all thai that wyth honowre  
 Suld put hys cors to sepultoure ;  
 For he sayd, at cōwatys  
 Off gold gert hym mak sacrifyis

Till fals mawmentys, and for-thi  
 He wes till presthad wnworthy. 2560  
 Till Dyoclytyane syne he past,  
 And confessyd before hym fast  
 That he wes lele Crystyn-man;  
 The emprioure gert sla hym than,  
 And efftyr that mony [a] day  
 Wngraŵyn outht the erde he lay,  
 Quhill Marcellus the byschape,  
 That efftyr hym wes chosyn Pape.  
 Saynet Petyr, the appostill brycht,  
 Apperyd till hym apon a nycht, 2570  
 In wysyowne, lang before day,  
 Quhare slepand in hys bed he lay,  
 And cald hym be hys name, " Marcell,  
 Gyff thow be slepand, now me tell."  
 " Lord," he ansuered, " quhat ar yhe  
 In till this tyme [that] callys on me?"  
 " Off the appostillis prynce am I,  
 Petyr," he sayd, " and askis quhy  
 " My cors thow thoyls wngraŵyn be  
 Lyand outht the erd?" Than he 2580  
 Ansuerd and sayd, that he herd tell,  
 [His] predecessor, the Pape Cornell,  
 At the request off Saynet Lucyne,  
 In tyll a towmbes off marbyr fyne,  
 Gert hys body beryd be,  
 Wytth festyŵalle solempnyte.  
 " Nay," sayd Saynet Petyr, " Marcellyne,  
 That has myne successoure bene syne,  
 And my falow in all degré,  
 Wngraŵyn lyis, as thow may se: 2590  
 Gyŵe thow likys," he sayd, " till luke,

Thow sall fynd wryttyn in the Buke,  
 Quha that wyll draw hym on hycht,  
 Lawch downe behowys hym for to lycht;  
 And quha that haldys hym in the lawe,  
 Till hycht hys meiknes will hym drawe.  
 He has denyd, and saw dide I,  
 In that oure partys fell ewynly,  
 And syne, efftyr [his] contrityowne,  
 Off gud wyll tuk the passyowne 2600  
 Off dede, for Jhesu Cryst, hys lard,  
 That hewyn has gyvyn hym for rewarde.  
 He hym meikyd in mekyll thyng  
 That hym forjugyd fra grawyng;  
 Tharefore," he sayd, " I byd thé  
 And nere me ger hym dolwyn be;  
 For honoure suld noucht be denyid  
 Tyll hym that grace has justyfyid."  
 Marcellus than, his successoure,  
 Apon the morne, wytth gret honoure, 2610  
 Enteryd hym nere by that place  
 Quhare that Saynet Petyr lyand was.

**Q**WHEN Marcellyne all thus was dede,  
 The Pape Marcellus in his stede  
 Sat fywe yhere and twenty days.  
 Maximiane, as the story sayis,  
 For caus he wald noucht sacrify  
 Till fals mawmentys dewotely,  
 Gawe hym byddyng for to kepe,  
 As herdys dois, nowyt and schepe;  
 Syne in thare stabill gert hym be 2620  
 Closyt, quhill thare-in dede wes ha.

Waleryus, Constans, and Lacyne  
Governyd all the empyre syne.

This Constans wes a dowchty knyght,

And in all werys wys and wycht :

Quhen he to Rome had wonnyn Spayne,

He past off counsalle in Brettane,

For to wyn till hym that land,

And till hald it in hys hand

2630

He come to Brettayne. Bot Coel,

That herd weill off hys commyng tell,

Send messyngerys till hym to say,

That he off Rome wald [al] his day

Hald ; wyth thi he payid na mare,

F. 97. b.

Than hys eldaris [had] payid are.

Constantyus grantyd thare-till,

And tuk hostage it to fulfill.

Coel deyd in a moneth syne ;

And lefft a dochtyr a wýrgyne,

2640

That excedyt off bewté

All the ladys off that cuntré,

That nane in Brettayne wes sa fare :

And, for he saw scho wes hys ayre,

He leryd hyr off mynystralsy,

And off all clerenes off clergy :

Scho hat Elane, that syne fand

The Cors in to the Haly Land.

Constans tuk hyr till hys wywe,

And mad hym kyng efftyr belyve ;

2650

And apon hyr gat Constantyne,

That Empryowre off Rome wes syne.

Thare-efft, or past wes nyne yhere,

This Constans wes broucht on bere ;

And till hys sone the land lefft he,

That worthy off sa gret bownté,  
 And off sa stowt and sturdy dede,  
 That he come man in his yhowthede.

**T**YLL Marcell Pape than successoure  
 Ewsebyus wes, and that honoure 2660  
 He held twa moneth and twa yhere  
 And fywe and twenty dayis clere.  
 Hys successoure Mylchiades  
 Syne Pape off Rome twa wyntyre wes:  
 He bad that men be na way  
 Sulde fast apon the Sonownday.  
 Than Canatulmel sex yhere wes;  
 Neyst hym Devortenauch-Notales  
 Wes bot a yhere in Scotland  
 Oure the Peychtys kyng regnand. 2670  
 Feredauch-Fyngell neyst to tha  
 Wes kyng regnand yheris twa.

## CHAP. X.

Off Silbester the Pope syne,  
 And off the Emprioure Constantyne.

A.D.  
 312.

**E**FFTYR the byrth off oure Lord dere  
 Thre hundyr wyntyre and twelf yhere  
 Gud Constantyn, that Elane  
 The kyngis dowchtyr off Brettayne  
 Borne off hyr body, wes Empriowre;  
 And thretty yhere in that honoure  
 He stude, and Haly Kyrkis fay

He supprysyd mony [a] day. 2680  
 In hys tyme till Melchiades  
 Silvestyr succedand wes  
 Pape off Rome, and twenty yhere  
 And thre to thai to rekyn clere,  
 F. 98. Ten moneth, as oure story sayis,  
 He sat, and ellewyn days.  
 In Nycia, that cyté,  
 A solempne Senyhe held he ;  
 Thre hundyr byschopys and auchtene  
 Thare revestyt well ware sene, 2690  
 And clerly expowndyt thai  
 In that Senyhe Haly Kyrkys fay.  
 This Sylvestyr thare-efftyr fiede  
 Fra Constantyne, for he hym drede,  
 For he was austere and cruelle  
 Ay till he in lypyre felle,  
 Brokyn owt in foule myselry,  
 Quhare-for till medicynarys in hy  
 For to recoŵyre hys hele he soucht,  
 Bot all thare craft aŵaylyhit noucht, 2700  
 Quhill the bischapys off the land,  
 That in the templys wer serwand  
 Till the mawmentys, sayd that he  
 Behuŵyd off nede bathyd be  
 In till innocentys blud all hat,  
 Gyŵe he recoŵyr suld hys stat.  
 Of this counsall als[sa] fast  
 The sarjandys apon byddyng past  
 And tuk wp barnys here and thare,  
 Quhare-evyr that thai waverand ware, 2710  
 In hous, or gat, as thai thaim fand,  
 To the sowme off thre thousand,



And put thame in gret sykyrnes  
 Till the tyme that ordanyt wes  
 And set, quhen he suld bathyd be.  
 And that ilk[a] day as he  
 In tyll hys chare fra hys palas  
 In hys way past to the plas  
 That ordanyd wes for his bathyng,  
 Wyth dulefull chere and sare murnyng, 2720  
 The modrys off the barnys thare  
 Gretand, fra thare hewyd the hare  
 Tyte and rawe as thai war wude,  
 And in that rage on thai yhud  
 Till thai met wyth the emprioure ;  
 Befor hym than, in that doloure,  
 They fell on kneys and cryid sa fast  
 That thai hym devyd at the last.  
 And quhen he herd that stedfastly  
 The caus that made thame sa sary, 2730  
 He stud ewyn wpe in till his chare,  
 And, till al that abowt hym ware,  
 He sayd, " Ilkane in yhoure degre,  
 I praye [yow], gyff yhoure wyllys be,  
 Nere togyddyre nowe yhe drawe,  
 And gyffys audyence to my sawe.  
 Off the empyre, the reawté  
 The state, the worschype, and the gre,  
 As all [your] phylosophyrys syngys,  
 Owte off the well off pyté spryngys ; 2740  
 Na thare sall na state endure,  
 In caysere, kyng, na empriowre,  
 Quhare that mercy tays na stede,  
 Bot all wyth awe and grew is lede.  
 For-thi, gud empriowrys beforne,

F. 98. b.

That had this state or I wes borne,  
As Tytus and Wespasiane,  
Alysawndyr and Adryane,  
Trajane," he sayd, " and othir sere,  
That in thare dedys dowchty were, 2750  
Quhen in batalle thai displayt  
Thare banerys, and thare fays assait,  
Thai gave in byddyng rycht stratly,  
And gert all oure thare ostys cry,  
That nane suld barne or women sla,  
Na clathys off thare bodiis ta,  
On payne off all that thai mycht tyne,  
And to be hangyt and drawyn syne :  
Now sen sa gud before oure dayis  
Thus led thame, as oure story says,. 2760  
Bettyr me ware wnborne to be,  
Na now fall in that cruawé  
All yhone innocentys to sla,  
For ony helpe at thai mycht ma  
To the hele of my body,  
That to recoŵyr fullyly  
Be na way can I certane be ;  
And set thai mycht recoŵyr me,  
Yhit it ware oure cruelle thyng,  
Off sa mony barnys yhyng 2770  
Off oure awyne natyowne  
For to mak sic distructyowne.  
Quhy suld we slay," he said, " our awyne,  
And thai forber that are wnknawyne,  
It is no speyd for to supprys  
Wyth fecht or were oure innymys,  
Gyffe we wyth mare cruawté  
Amang oure-self discumfyt be ;

- Men off armys wyth thare mycht  
 F. 99. Thare fays ourcummys in to fycht, 2780  
 Bot wyce, or syne, for to supprys  
 It is off wertu a qwyntys ;  
 In swylk pres it hapnys ay  
 That we ar starkare fere than thai,  
 Bot in to this, but dowl, we ar  
 Starkare than oure-selff befare.  
 Quha-evyr may happyn for to be  
 In to that fecht discumfyte, he  
 Wynnys hale the wyctory,  
 And the victor certainly 2790  
 Efftyre hend his gré is qwyte  
 In till hys jurnay discumfyt,  
 Quhare that mercy and pyté  
 Discumfyt lysis throuch cruawté.  
 For-thi," he sayd, "in to this fycht  
 Pety owre wyll sall have the mycht,  
 For bettyr," he sayd, "oure innymys  
 In all kyn pres we may supprys,  
 Gyff it may happyn gywe we be  
 Wytht mercy wencust and pyté. 2800  
 He may be cald," he sayd, "a larde  
 That mercy haldys in to warde ;  
 Bettyr it is me to be dede  
 Than to recoveryr," he sayde, "remede  
 Off my langwre, wyth the blude  
 And slauchtyr off sic a multitude  
 Off barnys, yhong and awenand,  
 Off oure awyne natyowne now growand."  
 Wyth that till thaire modrys he  
 Gert delyvyr the barnys fre, 2810  
 And gawe thaime gyfftyys gret allsua,

And hame syne frely lete thame ga.

That ilk[a] nycht, lang befor day,  
As slepand in hys bed he lay,  
The honorabyll appostylis twa,  
Saynct Petyre and Saynct Paule alsua,  
Apperyd to this empriowre

That gretly menyd hys languore,  
And sayd, "Jhesu Cryst, our lard,  
That has all gud [thyng] in hys warde,  
Has send ws for to comfort thé,

2820

And byddys at thow sykyre be  
Thi hele for till recoŵyre welle  
Off all thi seiknes ilk[a] delle ;  
For thow lefft to spylle sakles blud  
Off swa gret a multitwde

Off innocentys for thi body ;  
It is oure counsalle hale, for-thi,

F. 99. b.

To the byschope Sylvestyr,  
That preŵaly is bydand nere,  
Thow send, and he sall informe thé  
Quhare-in that thow may bathyde be,  
And off thi lepyr swa thow sall  
The hele rycht wele recovyr all ;  
And syne to Cryst, thi werray lard,  
Thow sall mak sa gud rewarde,  
That off fals ydolys thow sall gere cast

2830

Downe the templys als[sa] fast,  
And haly kyrk thow sall restore  
In bettyre state than it before  
Thow fand, and syne honoure ay  
God, and hald wele Crystyne fay."

2840

Quhen thus our-dryŵyn wes the nycht,  
And on the morne the day wes lycht,

The Empryowre gert knychtis pas  
 To sek quhare Saynet Sylvestyr was ;  
 And quhen he saw thai knychtys nere,  
 He wend that thai cummyn were  
 Hym to draw in thare felny  
 For till have tholyt martyry. 2850  
 Bot fra thai had melyd sammyn  
 All togyddyr off thare gammyn,  
 Thai past to the Empryowre,  
 And he resaywyd wyth honoure  
 Saynet Sylvestyr, and syne onone  
 Per ordyr al hys wysione  
 He tauld, and askyd hym alsua  
 Gywe Petyre and Paule war goddys twa.  
 The byschop Silvestyr maid answere  
 And [said] thai Goddys Apostylis were ; 2860  
 Syne schawyd he to the Empriowre  
 Off Saynet Petyr the fygure,  
 And ane ymage off [Sanct] Paule alsua ;  
 And quhen the Empryowre saw thai twa,  
 He affirmyt that thai war thai  
 That apperyd quhare he lay  
 Till hym in his wysione.  
 The Pape Sylvestyr syne onone  
 Baptyst this Constantyne,  
 And injwnyd till hym syne 2870  
 In fastyng all a w[ou]ke to be,  
 And all in presowne to be fre  
 Lowsyd qwyte off thare pennans.  
 This Constantyne syne ordynans  
 In fredome mad off Crystyne fay,  
 That he devotly tuk that day.  
 For statute lawch fyrst ordanyd he

- F. 100. That Cryst a god suld honoryd be ;  
 Neyst that wes hys ordynans  
 That he suld tholle and bare pennans, 2880  
 Quha-eŵyr wyth heresy wald blame  
 Cryst, or set on hym defame :  
 Gyff ony syne wyth-in the land,  
 Agayne the lauch, wald tak on hand  
 A Crystyne man for to supprys,  
 Or for to wrang hym ony wys,  
 The tane half off hys gudis all  
 Till the empyoure suld fall  
 In till eschete, wyth-owt remede,  
 Or ony instans in till plede. 2890  
 He ordanyd alsua that the Pape,  
 That off the warld is mast byschape,  
 Suld be owre byschapys in honoure,  
 As is owre kyngys the emprioure.  
 Alsua quha that to the kyrk wald fle,  
 Thare gyrth he suld have and sauffté.  
 Als that nane ware sa hardy  
 Wyth-in ony parochy  
 Kyrk to byg, or oratore,  
 Wyth-owtyn leŵe gottyn before 2900  
 Off byschape, or off [the] patrowne  
 Off that parochy, or off the towne  
 Quhare that byggyng mad suld be.  
 And efftyre that neyst ordanyd he  
 That the teyndys off all feys,  
 Landys, and regalyteis,  
 And off alkyn possessyown,  
 Suld, to the sustentatyown  
 Off Haly Kyrk, be payit ay.  
 And efftyre than, the auchtand day 2910

Till Saynct Petrys kyrk in hy  
 He come bare fute devotly,  
 And mad hys confessiown,  
 Wyth gret and sare contrityown,  
 Off all the synnys that he had done.  
 A mattok syne he tuk, but hone,  
 And wyth that rypyd to the grownd  
 Quhare that he thought a kyrk to fownde,  
 And on hys schuldrys thare, but dowl,  
 Off erd twelff bakkatys he bare owt. 2920  
 Quhen Constantyn wpon this wys  
 Was howyn, as I yhow dewys,  
 And off the Romanys a gret delle  
 Baptysyd ware, and trowyt welle,  
 Be the ensawmpill off Constantyne,  
 And off Saynct Sylvestyr the prechyne,  
 A gret part off the cytezanys,  
 And mony off [the] suburbanyes,  
 Senatowrys, and othir [ma] sere,  
 That noucht baptysyd na trowand were, 2930  
 Assemblyd befor the Emprioure  
 And sayd at thai wald thaire murmwre  
 Rewelle till hym, gyff that he  
 Wald noucht at thame displesyd be.  
 And quhen he gaue thame lewe to say  
 All that in thaire gule lay,  
 Ane for all than spak in hy,  
 And sayd that, " Throwch the novelry  
 That is oysyd in till Rome  
 Syne that yhe tuk the Crystyndome, 2940  
 And oure falowys has lefft the fay  
 That oure eldrys held alway,  
 Ilké day is oure cyté

F. 100. b.

Stade in hard perplexyte ;  
 For, as yhe wate, and has hard telle,  
 Nere here by a dragowne fell  
 Wndyr erd in a cowe lyis,  
 And to the towne reparys offtays,  
 And as he rewmys and he berys,  
 All the towne in styng he sterys, 2950  
 Quhill sex thousand on a day  
 Throwch pestilens qwyte dede away  
 Now comownaly may fundyn be  
 Off yhowng and auld in oure cyté.  
 The madynnys," thai said, " off oure land,  
 Yyoung damysellys and awenand,  
 Bath ryche and pure in thare degré,  
 Off the land and the cyté,  
 Ilké yhere on thare best wys  
 Oysyd to mak thare sacrifys 2960  
 Till Dame Westa dewotly,  
 That wes bath goddes and lady,  
 Thaire hope, thaire heille, and [thar] aʒowé  
 Off thaire myrth and thare jolyte ;  
 Than thare almws halyly  
 And the releyff off thare mawngery,  
 Thai oysyd to cast to that dragowne  
 That now is on ws rycht fellowne.  
 Swa throwch mycht off that lady,  
 And releyff off that mawngery, 2970  
 Ay still in till hys den lay hé,  
 And noucht anoyid the cyté ;  
 Bot syne yhe and thai off Rome  
 Off newe now has tayne Crystyndome,  
 And has lefft oure eldrys fay,  
 We are anoyid ilk[a] day



Throwe owtrage and throw wyolens  
 Off yhon best in this pestilens.  
 For-thi, Lord, we ask yhowe, hale,  
 Off this," thai said, " now yhoure consalle 2980  
 And yhowre helpe, at oure cyté  
 And we may sauff wnperyst be."

Wyth that Sylvestyr that wes by  
 The Empriowre, and mast redy  
 F. 101. Off answare, bad that thai suld tell  
 Hym quhare that dragown lay sa fell.  
 And quhen thai sayd hym that thai walde  
 Ken hym to that bestys halde,  
 Till his orator he past,  
 And hym revestyd als[sa] fast, 2990  
 And wyth hys clerkys syne in hy,  
 And thai Romanys in cumpany,  
 Till the cove off that dragowne  
 He yheid in till processyowne,  
 And the cros on his body  
 He mad offtsys devoutly,  
 And in the cove syne he  
 Wnabasydly mad entre,  
 A hwndyr greys ewyn dipband down  
 Wndyr [the] erd to that dragown ; 3000  
 And throwch hys devote prayare  
 That felowne beste sone brystyd thare ;  
 And wpe agayne syne as he past  
 Wytht yhettys off bras he closyt fast  
 Off that deipe den the entré,  
 That nevyr mare sall opnyd be  
 Befor the mekill day off dome.  
 Than als[sa] fast [al] thai off Rome  
 That befor that had noucht tane

Crystyndome, than trowyd ilkane 3010  
 In Jhesu Cryst, and baptisme tuk,  
 And fals mawmentys qwyte forsuke.

Thus Constantyne wes off Rome  
 The fyrst, that tuk Crystyndome  
 Neyst Philipe, that Decyus fell  
 Slwe, as yhe before herd tell,  
 And to the Kyrk gaŵe all the land,  
 That Papys sene syne had in thare hand ;  
 And feſte the Kyrk on mony wys  
 Wytth gret and fayre and fre franchys. 3020  
 On hys modyr halff, a Brettowne  
 He wes be kynd off natyowne,  
 For he wes son off Saynct Elane ;  
 And off hys fadyr half, a Romane ;  
 And wes in hys begynnyng  
 Bot anerly off Brettane kyng.

**I**N Rome that tyme a tyrande  
 Cruell and austere wes regnand,  
 That had to name Maxentius :  
 He had all tyme a comowne ws 3030  
 Till dysheryd the nobill-men,  
 That in Rome war duelland then,  
 And demanyd the empyre  
 Wytth tyrandyis, and werth, and ire.  
 He put to ded Saynct Katerine,  
 That gloryws and that pure virgyne ;  
 And thai that chast war off thaire land,  
 Come till Constantyn till warand,  
 And tauld hym off hys tyrandyis,

F. 101. b. And maid hym prayere mony wys 3040

To cum wytht thaime, and wyn thare land,  
 And hald the empyr in his hand.  
 He went with ane oste gret and stowte  
 Till Rome, and maid it wndyr-lowte,  
 And syne he had the Monarchy  
 Off all the gret Warld halily.

Constantyne apon this wys  
 Tyll Rome come, as I yhow dewys,  
 And thare in to the lepyr felle,  
 And helyd wes, as yhe herd me telle. 3050  
 Dame Elane and hyr emys thre  
 Wyttht hym till Rome that tyme had he :  
 And deputys behynd hym he left  
 To keipe Brettayne tyll hym thare-efft.

Bot Octaveus a gret man syne,  
 That cummyn wes off kyngys lyne,  
 Ras, and thai deputys has slayne,  
 And held the kynrik in demayne.  
 He maid hym kyng, and off the land  
 He chasyd hys fays wyth stalwart hand. 3060

Quhen this tyll Constantyne was tauld,  
 Thre legyownys gret off knychtis bauld  
 Wyth Dame Elanys eme Traen  
 In tyll Brettayne send he then,  
 That aryvyd wytht mekyll mawcht,  
 And Octaveus thare he fawcht,  
 And wencust hym and all hys mycht.  
 Bot he etchfapyt fra the fycht,  
 And went till mychty men thare-by  
 Te sek helpe : bot specyaly 3070  
 He prayid his men, thai suld thame ma  
 Wyttht sum slycht Traen to sla :  
 And an erle off hys cumpany

Watyde Traen sa bysily,  
 That wytth ane buschement he had slayne  
 Traen. Octaveus than agayne  
 Come in to Brettayne, and tuk the lande  
 All hale agayne in till his hand.  
 He chasyd the Romaynys al away,  
 And wes kyng till hys enday. 3080

All this tyme off the empyre  
 Constantyne wes lord and syre,  
 And Sylvestyr Pape off Rome,  
 And kepare off all Crystyndome.  
 He maid wyth gret dewotyowne  
 Solempne dedicatiowne  
 Off the kyrk in till hys dayis ;  
 To that ensawmpyll yhit alwayis  
 That [is] oysyd ilk[a] yhere,  
 As the tyme fallys [annywersere]. 3090  
 And quhen that he awterys off stane

F. 102. In ilké kyrke gert fyrst ordane,  
 In till Saynet Savioris kyrk he  
 The fyrst awtere, made off tre,  
 He gert hald wp, for Petyr ay  
 On it oysyd hys Mes to say ;  
 And all othir in thare lywe  
 Efftir hym Papys successywe,  
 Quhill this Sylvestyr rysyn was,  
 On it oysyd to say thare Mes. 3100  
 For the persecutyowne,  
 That ay wes dowsows and fellowne,  
 There wes na place off stedfastnes  
 Quhar-in prestys mycht syng thare Mes ;  
 Bot in tyll honest howsys sere,  
 Quhare men off gud fame duelland were,

Or wndyr erd in caŵys depe,  
 That men oysyd fra fylthe to kepe,  
 Or betwene howsys and pentys  
 That ordanyd were off sere qwentys, 3110  
 Prestys foure oysyde to bere  
 To swylk stedys that awtere,  
 That wytht four nwkys holl wes mad,  
 In ilké nwke a ryng it had,  
 And prestys foure oysyde to bere  
 Wyth thai foure ryngys that awtere.

The Comete, as the story sayis,  
 Fyrst apperyd in thai dayis ;  
 That is a starne wyth blesys schyre,  
 Brycht as is the lowe off fyre, 3120  
 And ay betakynnys pestilens ;  
 Quhen that it makys apperens.  
 Dede off lordys, or hungyr sare,  
 And ay the beme it strekys thare  
 Quhare that infortune sall rys ;  
 That the Comete signyfyis.

Constantyne the Empriowre  
 Hys lyff than endyt wyth honoure.  
 In Rome than ras dyssentyowne  
 Abowte the successyowne 3130  
 To the empyre ; for Maximiane  
 And the fell Dyoclytyane,  
 Off quham before yhe herd me tell,  
 Fra thare state of the empyre fell :  
 Off cownsalle and [of] ane assent,  
 And wndelyveryde aŵysement,  
 To thaire state thai ranownsyde hale  
 For thai sustene wald na trawale,  
 And thocht tyll lyŵe off thare tresore

That thai had gadryd lang before 3140

In ese and qwyete, but trawale,  
And thole thaim [to] tak the governale  
That suld succede be lynage  
To the empyre off herytage.

F. 102. b. This consent wes done in-dede  
And let the ayrys be laucht succede.

Efttyr all this Maximiane  
Agayne the Empyre wald have tane;  
And for that caus in tyll gret stryffe  
He [lede] a lange tyme off hys lyffe 3150  
Wyth Constantynys sonnys thre,  
That anelyd to that rywawté.

Octaveus in to thai dayis,  
As off the Brute the story sayis,  
Off [al] Brettayne hale wes kyng,  
And had that land in governyng.

He had a douchtyr yhong and fayre,  
That off laucht than wes hys ayre;  
Hys counsale mast part thowcht, that he  
Suld ger that douchtyr maryd be 3160

Wyth sum ryche man for hys ryches:  
And Conane-Meryaduk, that wes  
Hys nevew, neyst [hym] suld be kyng,  
For he wes neyst off thare offspryng.  
Bot Baradok Duke off Cornwayle  
Thought, it suld welle mayr awayle  
To feche at Rome Maximiane,  
That off the empriowrys wes ane.

Swa it fell hym syne, that he  
In Brettayne come wyth gret menyhe, 3170  
And that lady to wyff has tane.

Sa wrathe at that than wes Conane,

That he assemblyd all hys mycht,  
 And mellayd welle offt into fycht,  
 And owrcome quhyll [he, qwhile] he,  
 Qwhyll at the last the hale barné  
 Off Brettayne knyht thame in sawchtnyng,  
 Bot Maximiane be lefft kyng.

**Q**WHEN that fywe yhere ware efftyre gane,  
 Swa prydyt hym Maximiane 3180  
 For hys gret sylvyr and ryches,  
 That hym thowcht Brettayne lytyll wes  
 For to mayntene hys ryawté  
 Bot he wald ga wyn Frawns all fre.  
 Tharfore all the cheŵalry,  
 That wes in Brettayne, halyly  
 He wyttht hym to the Se has tane,  
 And alsua Myreadok-Conane.  
 And Armaryk fyrst conqwest he,  
 That Lytill Brettayne now cal we; 3190  
 And all that gave he to Conane:  
 And syne off Brettayne gert be tane  
 Off hwsbandys a hundyre thowsand,  
 Till inhabyt and hald that land;  
 And fyftene thowsand armyt men  
 Wyth hym als he lewyth then;  
 And Lytill Brettayne gert it call.  
 F. 103. This Conane and hys ofspryng all  
 Governyd it sa wyttyly ay,  
 That it hate Brettayne to this day. 3200  
 Quhen Maximiane wonnyn had  
 All Frawns, and till him subjecte mad  
 Treverys, [he] to Rome went syne,

Quhare he slayne wes be cuvyne  
 Off the Empriowre Gratyane.  
 All thus endyt Maximiane,  
 And [the] Brettownys, that wyth hym ware,  
 Ware slayne, and chasyd here and thare :  
 And the Quhene, that etchapyd than,  
 In Brettayne passyd till Conan.

3210

**Q**WHEN thai off Dacy and Sythy  
 Saw, quhow Brettayne wes wtraly  
 Lewyd all woyd off armyt men,  
 In Brettane thai arywyd then,  
 And townys and castellys wp has tane :  
 For wyth hym had Maximiane  
 All the gud fechtarys off the land ;  
 Nane lefft, that evyr wytht strenthe off hand  
 Mycht warand the small folk fra the fycht,  
 Na for [to] stynt thare fayis mycht.

3220

Bot fra Rome come twa legyownys  
 Till help and succoure the Brettownys ;  
 Munyceps Gratyane than was  
 Thare chyftane, that the sé can pass.  
 Wytht thare fayis he met in fycht,  
 And wencust thame wyth mekyll mycht,  
 And chasyd thame till Yrland.

Syne off Gret Brettane all the land  
 He tuk till hym, and mad hym kyng.  
 Bot he wes in sum kyn thyng  
 Tyrand, that [the] comownys halyly  
 Ras, and slw hym dyspytwaly.

3230

Quhen he was dede, thai that fled ware  
 Tyll Yrland, agayn cummyn are



In Brettayne, and it wastyd more,  
Than evyr thai had done before.

The Brettownys than that wüst na rede  
Till help thame-selwün fra the dede,  
Send word [to Rome] thare help to craŵe,  
And sayd, thai wald thaim al tyme haŵe 3240  
To thaire lordys, gyff that thai  
Wald put thare fays wytth fecht away.  
Than thai off Rome a legyowne sent,  
That hastyly to Brettan went,  
And put tha alyenis away.

A Wall thare-efftyr ordanyt thai  
For to be made betwene Scotland  
And thame, swa that it mycht wythstand  
Thare fays, that thame swa skayth[it] hade;  
F. 103. b. And it off comon cost thai maid; 3250  
And yhit men callys it Th[r]yl Wal

Quhen this was done that I say all,  
The Romanys to Rome has tane thare way.  
Bot, or thai went, thai can thaim say,  
That thai wald cum na mare agayne:  
For, or thai suffere wald swylk a payne,  
And for thame oft be trawalit swa,  
Thaire tribwte lewýre thai wald forga.

QWHEN that the Romanys passyt ware,  
The alienis, that [war] chasyd are, 3260  
Repayryd, and nere all the land  
Dystroyit wyth fyre and fellown hand.  
The Walle bot litill helpe thame made;  
For thai, that it in kepyng hade,  
Ware drawyn wytth crukys oure the wall,

Quhill thai fled, and lewyt [it] all.  
 Than thaire fayis, that laysere had,  
 Sloppys in syndry placis mad.

The Bretownys wyst na counsell than ;

Bot a byschope, a worthy man, 3270  
 In Litill Brettayne till Audroen  
 Thai send, that thare wes regnand then,  
 To byd hym cum, and be thare kyng ;  
 For he wes off the ofspryng  
 Off Brwtus, that all Brettane wan,  
 And in the ferd gre fra Conane.

He wald nawys thare-till assent ;  
 Bot [his] brudyre wytth hym [he] sent,  
 Constantyus, and twa thowsand  
 Off men armyt bathe fute and hand. 3280

Thai arrywyt, and syne fawcht,  
 And thare fayis wyth mekyll mawcht  
 Wencust, and chasyd off the land.  
 Than the barnage tuk on hand  
 To mak thare kyng this Constantyne,  
 That the land welle governyd syne.

Now I suspend here off Brettayne  
 The storys, quhill I have ouretane  
 Off the Romanys the storys  
 A part, as yhe herd me dywys. 3290

**E**FFTYRE the dede off Sylvestyr  
 Mark succedyt, [and] twa yhere  
 Aucht moneth and twenty dayis  
 He Pape was, and the story sayis,  
 At solempne Mess[is] he  
 Ordanyd that the Creyd suld be

Sayd or songyn, as the Mes  
Done wyth note or prywe wes.

Quhen this Mark [the] dede had tane  
Julus succedyt, a Romane, 3300  
F. 104. And Pape off Rome wes ellewyn yhere

Twa moneth and aucht dayis clere.  
A gret Senyhe gaderyt he  
In tyll Nyce[a] that cyté,  
Thre hundyra. byschopys and aughtene  
In to that Senyhe solempne ware sene.  
Saynct Hylare and Saynct Nicholas  
That tyme in thare statys was,  
And mony odyr byschopys ma.  
Anastas that tyme allsua 3310

Mad *Quicumque iuvit* in dede,  
Quhare all the artyclys off the Crede  
Ar dystynyt halyly;  
Quha trowys noucht in thame stedfastly,  
Lyppyn he nevyr sauff to be  
Fra the pyne off hell all fre.  
That Senyhe condemnyt halyly  
Off Arryus the heresy :

He [helde] that Goddys Sone wes les  
In Godheide than the Fadyr wes ; 3320  
Off the Fadyr and the Son sua he  
Denyid the equalyté.  
The Senyhe made condemnatyowne  
Off that fals oppynnyowne.

A.D.  
345.

THRE hundyr fywe and fourty yhere  
Efftyr the byrth off oure Lord dere,  
Off Constantyne the sonnys thre

That wyth [his] body gottyn had he,  
In [t]hys tyme to the empyre ras ;  
Constantyne the eldast was, 3330  
Neyst Constans, syne Constantyus,  
Thir thre bredyre callyd war thus.  
Amang thame-selff gret were thai mad,  
And thai off Rome gret scathys had  
Throwch thare were and thare fechtynge,  
That enduryt and had lestynge  
Fully foure and twenty yhere,  
The Romanys all anoyt were.  
Bot the eldest Constantyne  
Wan fra hys twa bredyre syne 3340  
Hale the empyre, and was than  
Empriowre and gud Crystyn man.  
The yhongest off the bredyre thre,  
That Constantyus ere callyd we,  
Had wyth hym men off cownsaill fell  
That ware in dedys rycht cruell ;  
Tha the eldare bruthir slwe.  
F. 104. b. Constantyus to the empyre drwe,  
And governyd it wyth gret stowtnes,  
Bot a foule herytyk he wes, 3350  
And lywyt all in to that fay  
That Arryus held in tyll hys day ;  
For hym [and his] oppynnyown  
He made ay gret defensyown.  
Off Constantynopill quhare than he had  
Hys duellyng and hys prechyng mad,  
For hys oppynnyown the clergy  
Gert hym be sowmownd rycht stratly,  
To here the condemnatyowne  
Off his fals oppynnyowne. 3360

Swa on that certane set day,  
 That for that caus assygnyd thai,  
 As this Arryws hym sped  
 Till that assignyd certane sted,  
 Off nede, swa he oure-takyn wes  
 That hym behowyd to do hys es :  
 Wyth hast thare-fore he tuk hys sete  
 [Opyn and] playne in the markete,  
 Thare thrawand thurstys hard hym thurstyt  
 Quhill hys bowalys wyth-in hym brystyt, 3370  
 Hys guttys rawe, bath gret and small,  
 And [his] kwnditys opynnyd all ;  
 For the stynek off his foule gare  
 Mony that abowte hym ware  
 To ded brystyd ; and all thus  
 The end fell off foule Arryus.

Donate than wes in his state,  
 And in that tyme hys libell wrate,  
 That now barnys oysys to lere  
 At thaire begynnyng off gramere : 3380  
 And Saynct Jerome in thai yheris  
 The best wes callyd off his scoleris.

Off Saynct Andrew the body was  
 That tyme translatyd fra Patras  
 Till Constantynopill : and [of] Saynct Luke  
 The body als, as sayis the buke,  
 Translatyd wes that tyme alsua.

Julyane the Apostata  
 In ane Abay mwink hym made,  
 For off Constantynus dowte he had 3390  
 That he wald hym to dede haue done,  
 Bot yhit he changyd purpos sone,  
 For all tyme fra land to land

F. 105.

In habit off mwnk he wes vagand.  
 For he wes to gud Constantyne  
 Brodyre sone and nere cusyne,  
 He yharnyt tyll have bene empirioure,  
 And ay anelyd to that honowre,  
 And for-thi quhare[evyr] he past,  
 At wychys and at spaymen fast 3400  
 He thraly speryt gyve that he  
 Mycht ewyre opteyne and wyn that gre.  
 In lyklyness off a spayman,  
 Off cas the dewyll spak wyth hym than,  
 And sayd he suld be empiriowre;  
 Swa fell he sone in swilk erroure,  
 That he away kest fra hym qwyte  
 The mwnkys rewle and the habyte,  
 And throch that dewillys suggestyowne  
 He made renuncyatyowne 3410  
 Off baptyisme and off Crystyne fay,  
 And lywyd furth in paganys lay.

**T**HAN ras he Empryowre in the sted  
 Off Constantyus quhen he wes dede.  
 For leth and felny that he had  
 Till Crystyne men, gret lawys he mad  
 Agayne thare Crystyndome; sa mony  
 Wndyr hym deyde throwch martyry;  
 Paule and Jhone thare passyowne  
 Tholyt wndyr hys persecutyowne. 3420

Off Mede the kynryk, and off Pers,  
 And Asy, as I herd rehers,  
 He wan till hys subjectiowne,  
 And tuk thare contributyowne.

Throwch Capades syne as he past  
 Saynct Basyle he anoyit fast,  
 That byschope wes off that cyté than,  
 And wes off lyff a haly man :  
 This Julyane made in to that qwhille  
 Gret manans tyll [this] Saynct Basille 3430  
 And till othir Crystyne men  
 That wndyr hys powsté lywyd then.  
 Than this Saynct Basyle specyaly  
 Hys prayer mad till oure Lady,  
 Wyth thra and gret devotyowne,  
 In fastyng and in urystowne,  
 That scho wald sum wengeance ta  
 Off Julyane that Apostata.  
 Swa slepand on a nycht hym thought  
 All sudanly that he wes browcht 3440  
 In till a kyrk off oure Lady,  
 Quhare men and woman war mony ;  
 Sum on kneysis in urystown,  
 And sum in contemplatowyn,  
 That thought off halynes suld be  
 Callyd and haldyn in propyrte ;  
 For wys men suld on na kyn wys  
 Oys ony othir merchandys,  
 In chapel, kyrk, or orator,  
 Bot that that thai ar ordanyd for ; 3450  
 That is contemplatowyn  
 Or prayer wyth devotyon.  
 This haly byschope Saynct Basyle  
 Slepand saw, in to that quhille,  
 The ymage off oure Lady brycht  
 Downe [out] off ane tabernakyll lycht,  
 That outhe [the] autere standand was,

And tuk hyr rayk wyth mov[and] pas  
 But in the kyrk, wyth-owtyn bade,  
 Quhare that a grauwe off new wes made, 3460  
 And layd in till it a dede knyght,  
 That Mercurius callyd wes ryght.  
 Than Basyle herd that ymage say  
 To the body that thare lay,  
 " Rys, Mercurius, rys and sla  
 Julyane the Apostata,  
 And wyth wengeans sa thow qwyte  
 The defoule and the dyspyte  
 That that herytyk has done  
 To me," scho sayd, "and to my Sone." 3470  
 Wyth that the ymage als[sa] fast  
 Off oure Ladye agayne past,  
 And in the tabernakyll yhede ;  
 The dede body ras, gud spede,  
 And tuk a spere in till hys hand,  
 That in the kyrk he saw lyand,  
 And raykyt off the kyrk hys way.  
 The byschape Basyle quhare he lay  
 Than waknyt and oure-drauwe that nyght  
 Quhill on the morne that day wes lycht ; 3480  
 Than herd he tell that Julyane  
 Ourtakyn wes wyth dede subytane ;  
 Then past he to the kyrk in hy,  
 And thare the spere he fand bludy.  
 Than wes Saynct Martyne in hys flowris,  
 And othir syndry confessoris  
 Till hym ware contemporane.  
 In Scotland than Saynct Nynyane  
 In tyll the tyme that Martyne wes,  
 Led hys lyff in halynes. 3490



And be oure Cornykyll off Scotland  
 Garnat-Rych was than regnand  
 Kyng oure [the] Pechtis fourty yhere.  
 Syne quhen hys dayis endyt were,  
 [Talarge] wes kyng, and led hys lyve  
 In Scotland twenty yhere and fywe,  
 Till all the yheris war oure-gayne  
 Off Constantyne and Julyane,  
 And all the empyowrys be dene,  
 That betwene thame twa had bene.

3500

F. 106.

**L**IBER, Felix and Damasus,  
 Efftire the dede off Julyus,  
 Off Rome ware papys in thare lywe  
 Ilkane till othir successywe.  
 This Damasus I herd rehers  
 Couth mak rycht well in metyre wers,  
 Saynct Jerome wrate till hym, but were,  
 Amang othire haly wryttys sere,  
*Gloria Patri* in [till] twa wers;  
 And bade that he suld ay rehers  
 Efftire ilk Psalme tha twa;  
 All haly kyrk yhit oysys swa.

3510

Quhen Damasus wes pape off Rome,  
 The gloryus doctor Saynct Jerome  
 Wes hys luwyd famyliare,  
 And translatyd the psaltare  
 At hys request and his instans.  
 This Damasus made ordynans  
 That prestys and clerkys in to the qwere  
 Suld stand, as now is the manere,  
 On ilk[a] syd ordenaly,

3520

And off the Psalmys dystynctly  
 The ta part suld the fyrst wers say,  
 The tothir syd the neyst wers ay  
 Suld begyn, and ilk[a] syd  
 Suld wayte thare tymys and abyde,  
 And wers sa efftyr wers suld say  
 Quhill endyt all the Psalme had thai,  
 And *Gloria Patri* at the fyne,  
 Wyth *Sicut erat* efftyre syne:  
 All Haly kyrk efftyre thai dayis  
 Syn syne has haldyn this oys always.

3530

Efftyr the dede off Julyane  
 Jovyne and Valentynyane  
 Empreowris war successywe;  
 Bot Valentyne in to the lywe  
 Off the Apostata Julyane  
 Off all hys knyghtys wes chyftane,  
 And than, as hym behowyd on nede  
 Tyll lewe Crystyndome, or knycthede,  
 He lefft hys knyghtys off gud wyll,  
 And Crystyne trowth he chesyd hym till:  
 Bot syne efftyr that Julyane  
 Wes endyt wyth dede subytane,  
 To that fell persecutoure  
 He hapnyt to be successoure.

3540

The Saxonys that ware wycht,  
 And agayne Rome mekyll off mycht;  
 Wyth hys nawyne apon the sé  
 And wytht hys ost abawndonde he.

3550

F. 106. b.

Fayre off fassowne and off face,  
 And sutyle off ingyne he was;  
 Pert off wult, and eloquent,  
 And ewynlyk in till jugement;

Off wordis few, and myld off mwde,  
And in all thyng off haŵyng gude.

Hys brodyre Wālens held that fay,  
That Arryus held in till hys day :  
All Crystyne men he thought for-thi  
Tyll have dyseyst grettumly ;  
Bot Wālentyné this empreowre  
Resystyd ay till hys erreoure.

3560

Durst-Hyrbosone in Scotland  
Wes oure the Pechtis kyng regnand,  
And held that state a hundyre yhere,  
And dyd a hundy batalys sere.

**E**FFTYRE the dede off Damasus,

The Pape off Rome, Syrycius,  
Elleŵyn moneth, and xv yhere,  
And fyŵe and twenty dayis clere,  
The Se he held as pape off Rome.  
The clerk in hys tyme Saynct Jerome  
Translated the Bybill off Hebrwe,  
The Testymentys bath Auld and Newe  
He translatyd in Latyne.

3570

In tyll his tyme Saynt Austyne  
Ressaŵyd off newe Crystyndome  
Quhill this Syryce wes pape off Rome,  
Saynt Ambros in the Anfenere  
Antemys mad, and Respondys sere,  
And in it wersyklis als can wryte,  
Syne ymnys he made in till fayre dyte,  
And [the] antemys ordanyd he  
Amang the Psalmys sayd to be  
At Matynys and at Eŵynsang.

3580

At Prime and Howris thare-amang :  
 Fyrst on this wys and in this manere  
 Begouth oure serwyce in the qwere.

And in this tyme yhe herd me telle

In Emaws quhar wes a castell, 3590

A barne thar wes that tyme borne,  
 That few off swylk wes sene beforne,  
 For at the nawyll it was a mas,  
 And outhe and neuthe dyvysyd it was,  
 Wytth foure eyne and hewydys twa,  
 Foure eyrys, and foure browys alsua,  
 Twa mowthys dowbill-tuthyd wyth-in,

Neyssys twa, wyth doubill chyn,  
 And foure handys it hade yhete,  
 With twenty fyngrys and foure fete, 3600

Twenty tays it had rycht swa,  
 Betwene the theys yherdys twa ;  
 And dowbyll wyt be lyklynes,  
 In to that barne apperand wes,  
 For quhen the ta hewyd oysyd to slepe  
 The tothir than wald waik or wepe,  
 And quhen the tane wald tak the mete  
 Than wald the tothir nevyr ete.

F. 107.

The barne wes lywand twa yhere  
 On this wys and this manere, 3610  
 And quhen the ta parte wes dede away  
 The tothir lywyd quhill the thryd day.

Than wes Orosius in his state,  
 And hys buk till Saynct Austyne wrate.

**G**ALYEUS syne, and Gratyane,  
 And yhong Valentynyane,

Off the Empyre the reawté  
 Foure yhere held amang thame thre.  
 Syne ras the secund Gratyane,  
 And hys brodyr Valentynyane, 3620  
 And Theodosius, all thre,  
 Sex yhere held that ryawté.  
 This Gratyane thare-efftyre syne  
 Come off were till Argentyne,  
 And thretty thowsand in [till] fycht  
 Thare off his fayis to dede he dycht,  
 Throw wertu off the Crystyne fay  
 That stedfastly he held alway;  
 For in hys tyme all Ytaly  
 Off Arrius held the heresy, 3630  
 Bot in till hys dayis he  
 Gert it all conwertyd be.  
 He wes off gret literature,  
 In mete and drynk off gret mesure,  
 All lust off body he ourcome,  
 And endyd syne in Crystyndome.

## CHAP. XI.

*Off the emperoure Theodose  
 And the byschope Saynct Ambrose.*

A.D.  
 387.

**T**HRE hundyre yhere, foure score and seŵyn  
 Efftyre the byrth off God off Heŵyn,  
 Teodosius past in were  
 In to Grece, wytht gret powere, 3640  
 And wan the towne off Tessaly,  
 Ane gret [cyté] and a mychty,

That had conspyryde in gret ire  
 Agayne the state off the empyre.  
 Hys lutenandys thai slwe thare,  
 And offycerys that off hym bare  
 Cure or state, thai slw all downe  
 In to that wpset rycht fellowne;  
 This Teodosius, for-thi,

Gert sla all downe wyth-owt mercy,

3650

F. 107. b.

Wyth thai mysdoarys saclas blude,  
 That sowmyt wes in multitude  
 Fywe thowsand men, bathe barne and wyffe,  
 And wele ma thare lefft the lyff;  
 And efftyre that destructyowne  
 Owt off that land he mad hym bowne,  
 And come in Lumbardy agayne  
 Ewylene to the cyté off Mylayne.

Saynet Ambroys the haly man,

That byschape off that towne wes than,

3660

And herd how that saclas blude

Wes spylt in tyll sic multitude.

As Teodosius on a day

Fra hys palace tuk hys way

Towarte the kyrk : in to that quhille

This Saynt Ambros wyth-owte the style

Hym met, and sayd, " Quhare art thou bowne ?

I mak thé inhybytyowne

In Goddys kyrk to mak entre,

Quhill thi trespas amendyd be.

3670

Thow kennys thé as empyowre,

And noucht thi dedys off horroure,

Can thou noucht ken the fellown

Charge off thi presumptyowne,

Becaus off thi gret wodnes

Quhare alayne mony ware sacles,  
 Bot the welth that thow art in  
 Gerris thé perchans mysknawe thi syne ;  
 Therefore it worthys that resowne  
 Wnrewlyd statys inbawdowne. 3680

Oure nature, certys, ay suld be  
 Knawyn, and owre mortalyte,  
 And off oure tyme the lettyre day ;  
 The powdyr off oure eldrys ay  
 That lywyd in thare tyme before  
 Ay suld we draw till oure memore,  
 And off quhat thyng that we ar wrocht ;  
 And till quhat end we mon be browcht.  
 Nowthir in pyth off oure yhowthed,  
 Na in fresch coloure off oure fayrhed, 3690

Na in [to] robys off purpure,  
 Is off oure stays the honowre,  
 That felys the infyrmyté  
 Off brukyll fleysch, bot yhit ar we  
 Ay lyk till men in oure nature  
 For all the hycht off oure honure.  
 Thow art bot serwand yhit, I wys,  
 Off swylk serwandys as thow is ;  
 A lord is God, at we [on] call,  
 Kyng and makare off ws all, 3700

How dare thow wyth thi eyne se  
 The tempil off the Trynyté,  
 How may it cum in thine intent  
 To stampe on halowyd pathement  
 Wyth thai fete that sa fast yhude  
 For till spyll the sacles blude ;  
 How may thow hewe thai handys in hycht  
 Tyll Hewyn, or till God off mycht,

Quhare-off sacles blud drepand  
 Yhit wannewys bath slew and hand ; 3710  
 How may it fall in thine intent  
 Tyll ask the haly sacrament ?  
 Pas hame agayne, and pres thé noucht  
 To that fyrst syn that thow has wroucht,  
 For till eyke ma quhill thow that mend,  
 And that quhat God will on thé send.  
 Perchans it may be medycyne  
 The cumbyre that thow art fallyn in."  
 Thir wordys all the empyowre,  
 As cunnand man off literatoure, 3720  
 Herd, and consayvyd welle  
 Quhat fell to presthad ilké dele,  
 [And] past hame agayne wyth sare sychyng,  
 Menand hys state in gret murnyng,  
 Till aucht moneth nere ware past,  
 And Yhule thareefft wes cumand fast,  
 The tyme that Jhesu Cryst wes borne,  
 To sauffe oure lyff that wes forlorne.  
 Than Rwyffyne hys famylyere  
 That in all tyme wes till hym dere, 3730  
 Speryt the caus off his langure ;  
 Than sayd till hym the empyowre,  
 Menand gretly hys trespas,  
 " Allace ! allas ! that I borne was  
 Matere, or any caus to ma,  
 The kyrk to be remownde fra,  
 That comowne is to knawe and knyght,  
 And all that Crystyne man is ryght,  
 Tyll fre-man, gentyll, and to thrall,  
 The kyrk is oppyn, and kepys all 3740  
 That cummys wyth dewotyowne



Till God to mak thare orysowne ;  
 Is stekyd for my mysdede me fra,  
 And hewyn is closyt fra me alsua."  
 Than sayd Ruffyne, " I will ga trete,  
 But ony worde off awe or threte,  
 Wyth the byschope, to chawng or thrawe  
 Hys decrete in myldare lawe."

Till that than answeyrd Teodos,

" Pas on, bot I trow that Ambros

3750

Sall newyre decerne bot that is ryght,

And that decrete, be nakyn mycht

Off knyght, or kyng, or empyowre,

Or clergy, may be made erreure,

Na nevyr sall rewokyd be

F. 108. b.

For all thaire mycht or thare powsté ;

For I ken hym sa ewyn a man,

That all thare wyt hym mend na kan."

Eftyr that thus spak Teodos,

Ruffyne past on tyll Ambros,

3760

And as he pwt furth hys treté,

Ambros sayd, " Ruffyne, me thynk yhe,

Lyk a kene dog that ay bayis,

As thow me in this thyng assayis,

Berkand agayne the majesté.

Off mychty God, be thi tretté,

Set, as thow sayis, the empyowre

Mak hym to cum, for his terroure

I sall wyth-stand, and let that he

Wyth-in the kyrk sall mak entre.

3770

Suppos the state off hys empyre

In tyrandry he change and ire,

The dede I sall thole wylfully,

Or he me wyn wyth hys maystry."

Rwffyne than, hys medyatowre,  
Agayne past to the Empryowre,  
And all the wordis of Ambrose,  
He referryt till Teodos,  
That answeyrd and sayd mekly,  
" To the byschope bodyly,  
I wyll pas, and here quhat he  
Off my defawte wyll say to me."  
All thus he dyd, bot noucht for-thi,  
For all hys gret senyhowry,  
Wyth-in the kyrk he durst noucht ga,  
Bot wyth-oute hys bad to ma  
He set hym, and for to se  
The byschopys oportwnyte.  
Syne quhen the byschope bodyly  
He saw, and haylyssyd hym mekly  
That he wald lows hym off hys syne  
And bandys that he was cumbryd in,  
He made hym stedfast prayere.  
The byschope than on this manere  
Sayd, " Thi presens certainly  
Is all lyk till tyrandry :  
Thow mays thé agayne God to wede,  
And to supprys hys law in dede."

3780

3790

" Nay," he sayis, " on na kyn wys  
Thynk I agayne that law to rys,  
Na I thynk nevyr for to wyrk  
Agayne the state off Haly Kyrk ;  
Na yhit in it to mak entré,  
Quhill yhe Fadyr assolyhe me,  
And lows me off this band off syne,  
And cumbyr that I am fallyn in,  
And let noucht stek agayne me

3800

- The yhete off Hewyn, that ay suld be  
 Oppyn till all man penytent,  
 F. 109. And mercys askys wyth gud intent; 3810  
 For God hym-selff is tyll mercy  
 Than till wengeans mare redy.  
 This is the sowme off my prayere,  
 As I am mekly cunmyn here."  
 The byschape sayd, "Than quhat pennans  
 Has thow yhit done, or repentans,  
 For thi gret fell inyqwyté;  
 Quhat medycyne can thow lat se  
 Till hele or till ras thame agayne,  
 That in [thi] brethe thow gert be slayne?" 3820  
 Mekly than the Empryowre  
 Sayd, wytht rewerence and honowre,  
 "Yhoure part is, Fadyre, till injwne  
 The pennans that yhe wald war dwne,  
 And teche the rycht way to ga:  
 Tempyre yhoure medycyne rycht swa,  
 I oblys me for to fullfill  
 All yhoure byddyng wyth gud wyll."  
 The byschopys hart in mare meknes  
 At thir wordys turnyd wes, 3830  
 And sayd, "Syn resowne thine entent  
 Rewlyd nought in all jugement,  
 Bot rageand reche in [till] wodnes  
 Held nought ordyr off rychtwysnes,  
 For lauch I will now thow ger dyte  
 And wyth hast in lettrys wryte  
 The sentens off ewyne rychtwysnes,  
 Fordo[is] decretys off wodnes,  
 Wryte als and for lauch alwayis  
 Hald that full thretty dayis, 3840

Sentens off dede or banysyng  
 Be haldyn in wryte, but publyssyng,  
 To byde jugement off resowne  
 Wyth rype examinatyowne,  
 Than ire may be seysd welle.  
 Ourepassyd thai dayis ilk[a] dele,  
 And be lele lauch and lawté;  
 All thyng may welle dysponyd be.  
 Swa sentens gywyn lauchfully  
 Sall hald and bynd all sykyrly, 3850  
 And sentens gywyn but fowrme off lawe  
 The juge may wyth swylk cownsall hawe,  
 That nowthir sall folow syn na schayme  
 Na till hys state sall fall defayme,  
 Na be oure hasty jugement  
 Sall be supprysyd the innocent."

The Empryowre consaywyd welle  
 All thir wordys ilk[a] delle,  
 And oblysyd hym to fullfill  
 All thir statutis wyth gud wyll, 3860  
 And made welle hys confessyowne,  
 And tuk thare absolutyowne.

F. 109. b.

And in the kyrk wyth gude entent  
 He entryd and kyssyde the pathement,  
 And bade standand wytht-owte the qwere,  
 Quhare all the comownys standand were,  
 Herand the Mes thare all that qwhille,  
 Quhill done and red wes the Ewangylle,  
 And kepyd the tyme off Offerand;  
 On kneys than to the prestys hand 3870  
 He mad, and stude styll in the qwere,  
 Off the Mes the lave tyll here.  
 The byschape than wyth movyd wyll

Askyd quhy he bad thar sa styll,  
 Haldand wyth-in the qwere that plas,  
 That newyr to that state ordanyd was.  
 The Empryowre sayd mekly,

“ For nakyn hycht off senyhowry  
 I byd here, bot in gud entente  
 For to ressayve my sacrament.”

3880

The byschope chargyd till hym than  
 The archedene, a cwnnand man,  
 That sayd till hym, “ Schyre Empryoure,  
 To leve the qwere is yhoure honoure ;  
 For the qwere all halyly

For prestys is ordanyt specyally,  
 And to clerkys on thare wys

To syng or say thare thaire serwys,  
 Set yhoure aray off ryche purpwre,  
 Schawe yhowe now here Empryowre,  
 Yhoure purpure may noucht preystys ma,

3890

Owt off the qwere I rede yhe ga  
 A[nd] bwte, amang the comwnawté,  
 Byd [thar] youre oportunyté  
 Than to tak yhoure sacrament.”

Than bwt he passyd wyth gud entent  
 And sayd wyth-owt rebellatyowne  
 In till hys excusatyowne ;

“ I wend that cwstume here had bene,  
 In Constantynopyll that I have sene,

3900

That in the qwere off honowre  
 Is a sted for the Empryowre.

Bot leve [God],” he sayd syne,

“ This is bot halesum medycyne

For the [wodnes] off my syne

That I have lyine stynkand in.

And in this mene tyme yhe herd me tell,  
 Hys wyff, that was callyd Dame Placell,  
 A fayre lady and a plesand,  
 Honest, abyll, and awenand, 3910  
 Haly and relygyows,  
 Dyd mony dedys off almows.  
 Scho oysyd to wysyt bodyly  
 All powr [folk] that wes nere hyr by,  
 F. 110. In mete, or drynk, or clethyng,  
 And in all odyr nedfull thyng ;  
 Scho sparyd noucht thare fete to weysche,  
 Na yhit to sete thame fysche or fleysche ;  
 Bathe to powre, seke and sare,  
 Hyr besynes scho wald noucht spare, 3920  
 Bot serwyt thame wyth hyr awyne handys,  
 Lypnand noucht till hyr serwandys.  
 Quhen scho [wes] arguyd that that mycht be  
 Ondone welle for hyr honesté,  
 Bot for [to] gywe thame in payment  
 Swm thyng off moné wytth gud entent ;  
 Scho sayd swylk dedys off honoure  
 Fell tyll hyr lord the empyrowre,  
 Bot to sympyll all wes scho,  
 Swylk dedys as scho dyde to do. 3930  
 Scho sayd alsua tell hyr lord,  
 " Yhe suld wyth yhoure-selff record  
 Quhat yhe have bene and is to be,  
 Thare-till alsua thynk suld yhe  
 To be kynd till yhoure creature  
 That has yhow put in that honure,  
 And hald the law ; swa sall yhe welle  
 Yhoure empyre gowerne ilk[a] delle."  
 Betwene thys byschope Ambros

And the empyowre Teodos 3940

Wes made be mediatyowne

Gud reconsyliatiowne,

And be thame bath landys sere

Wes efftyre done off wertu clere.

The dedys off this empyowre

Sulde be, lordys, yhoure merowre,

To forbere inyqwyté,

And deme wyth lauch and lawté,

Off haly kyrk bath lare and lawe

To bere and lue, and hald wyth awe, 3950

Wyth nane oure hasty jugyment

Set to supprys the innocent.

Till byschope all tyme bowsum be

And prestys luwe in cheryté,

Pay that yhe awe thame blythly,

Tak na thyng fra thame wrangwysly.

It is a wnhonest tohyle

To se the qwyk the dede dyspoyle,

Quhen he is wondyn in hys schet,

The lyk it is I tell yowe yete, 3960

Or than till it it is the neyst,

A gentill-man to rewe a preyst.

Off preystys, at yhoure begynyng,

And all yhoure tyme till yhoure endyng,

And efftyre that yhe have mystyr ay ;

Tharefore wyth reverens gret suld thai

F. 110. b.

Be tetryd and led honesty,

And forborne rycht gretumly.

Efftyr all this, this Empyowre

Furthyryd hys lyff in gret honoure, 3970

Bathe pure and rych in thare degre

He luwyd and led in honeste ;

Tyrandryis and mawmentryis,  
 Herrysys and Lollardyis,  
 He fordyd, and kest all downe  
 The tempill off thare devotyowne.  
 He hade gret fame off gret powes,  
 Off wërtu he comendyt wes,  
 In Melane syne he tuk hys dede;  
 Tyll Constantynopyll fra that stede  
 He wes translatyd, and thare he lyis,  
 Hys sawle in joy off paradys.

3980

**T**O the Pape Syrycius  
 Succedyt Anastasius,  
 And held [the] Papys sé thre yhere  
 And sex and twenty dayis clere.  
 This Pape ordanyd in that quhille  
 The prestys or deknys, the Wångylle  
 At the Mes war hard redand,  
 Suld be bare-hewyd, on fut standand.  
 He ordanyd in hys tyme alsua  
 Thet na clerk suld ordyr ta,  
 Off hys lymmys bot gyff he  
 Ware hale wyth-owte deformyté.

3990

Than till this Teodosius,  
 Archad, and Honoryus  
 Tuk till thame the senyhowry  
 Of [al] the empyr halyly,  
 And threttene yhere thai held that state.

A byschope that tyme callyd Donate  
 Tuk a dragowne, that fellowne was,  
 And spyttyt ewyn in till hys face;

4000



Wytht that he slw that fell dragowne,  
Ane wgly best and a fellowne.

And oure the Peychtis in that quhyll  
Regnyd Golarge-Makamyle.

Ten yhere than Nectane-Kellamot.

Thretty yhere Drwst-Gortynot.

Galam neyst thame was regnand

Fyftene wyntyrr in Scotland.

4010

Drwst-Gygnowre wes fywe yhere kyng.

And aucht yhere syne Drust-Hoddrylyng.

Syne the fyrst Drwst yheris four.

Sex yhere Garnat-Gygnowre.

Hys brodyre efftyr Kylturnane,

Regnyd kyng fywe yhere and ane.

[Talarg] syne Makmordely,

Drwst neyst hym Makmonethy,

And Gagalah, fyftene yhere

F. 111.

Thai thre in Scotland kyngys were.

4020











